THE

OF THE

# HISTORY

OF THE

REIGN

O F

PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

VOL. II.

H.ISTORY

N D I E R

PHILIP II KING OF SPAIN

in the state of th

A CHARLES

gal & VC

THÉ

### HISTORY

OF THE

REIGN

IF THO, SECOND

# PHILIP THE SECOND, KING OF SPAIN.

By ROBERT WATSON, LL.D.

PRINCIPAL OF THE UNITED COLLEGE OF ST. SALVATOR AND ST. LEONARDS, IN THE UNIVERSITY OF ST. ANDREWS.

VOL. II.

THE THIRD EDITION.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR W. STRAHAN, AND T. CADELL IN THE STRAND; AND J. BALFOUR, AND W. CREECH, EDINBURGH. MDCCLXXIX.

#### Situe bushing from he I'm Carelling to be to be with which with the

I for the laber of the Tr H

ार्गालयभूमार्थ ग्र

ons adopted in the extension of a second of the extension of second of the extension of second of the extension of the extens  $\mathbb{L}_{>0}$  to  $\mathbb{H}_{>0}$  and with three

> We the prince a section of the value solution and vide remaindance and to upon

## E SECOND,

school KING OF SPAIN. e refolved to ...

with the little

G. R. MOVSEW MA BOOK NEW M. D. BHITANNICVE ANDARWS.

10 V. Jones Com . 101

ner de la companya EDITION.

> asolitisatiswood, to standuou with there will a doctor

Were territors to o a b o a:

STATES OF W. STRABAN, AND T. CARLES IN THE STRANDS MONORANOS (MOSERO) WOMBA (ANOSAN) COMA (BACO)

Magedaha

## HISTORY

of the REIGN OF

Leyden, Could, Bart Lander, and an B

#### PHILIP THE SECOND.

KING OF SPAIN. otier aucher in single but that the bit

# BOOK XI.

prince of Ounce, and the Blance, the come

IT 7 HILE the transactions that have been BOOK related passed in Zealand, the same fpirit of revolt, by which the people of that The revolt province were actuated, made rapid progress of Holland. in fome of the other provinces. The inhabitants of Enchuysen were the first in North Holland who had the courage to plant the standard of liberty upon their walls; and those of Medinblinc, Edam, Purmerend, and other towns, quickly followed the example. In some of these places, part of the people were averse to this revolution; but these were few, compared with their opponents, and were obliged VOL. II. B either

BOOK either to yield to the majority, or to secure themselves by slight from their resentment.

THE same measures were pursued, at the same time, in the southern parts of the province. That slame which had been kindled some time before, burst out at once in a thousand different places. And in a sew months, Leyden, Gouda, Dort, Haerlem, and all the other towns in Holland, Amsterdam excepted, had openly declared against the Spaniards, and avowed their resolution to acknowledge no other authority in suture, but that of the prince of Orange, and the States. The same resolution was formed in several of the cities of Overyssel, Friesland, and Utrecht.

This revolution, fo favourable to William's views, was not a little promoted by intrigues, which, although he himself was absent, were carried on in his name, and by his authority. In letters to the principal inhabitants he had allured them to his interest, by flattering them with the hopes of having all their privileges secured; of enjoying sull freedom to exercise their religion, whether protestant or catholic; and of being for ever delivered from that oppressive load of taxes with which they had been overwhelmed. In order to enforce these exhortations, he sent his agents throughout the provinces;

provinces; and most of these were persons 300 K either of great address, or of great authority and influence among the people to

meted by seal for their idligion.

3572.

WILLIAM's military preparations were at this time far advanced, and he hoped foon to begin his march, with the probability of a more prosperous issue than had attended his former expedition. He had already collected a formidable army of well-disciplined forces. Confiderable fums had been transmitted to him by the friends of his cause; and the strongest affurances had been given him, that some of the principal cities in the fouthern provinces would open their gates to receive him. But no circumstance contributed more to inspire him with a confidence of fuccess, than the new measures which, a little before the present period, had been embraced by the Court of Francesbaud and backbod and rasy and for bas

tary prepa-

fixty-nine. Their brave and adire leaden, if In the bloody contest, which had subsisted The affairs for feveral years between the catholics and pro-

In Holland, the revolution was chiefly owing to the activity of Sonoy, whom the prince had fent thither as governor-substitute, till he himself should arrive : and in Guelderland, Utrecht, and Friefland, to the count of Berg, a nobleman of interest in those parts, who was married to William's fifter, and acted in every thing by his dinuosily in maring preparat

testants

#### HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

NI.

testants in that kingdom, the former had generally been victorious. But the latter, roufed by their leaders, aided by foreign powers, animated by zeal for their religion, and inflamed with refentment on account of the cruel perfecutions which had been exercised against them, continued to make fuch vigorous efforts, as created in their enemies the most alarming apprehenfions with regard to the iffue of the war. The court had, at different times, offered them advantageous terms of accommodation; and peace had oftener than once been established between the contending parties. But their pretentions, their interests, and their religious principles, were incompatible; and they remained quiet only till they were in a condition to renew hostilities. The court never had more reason to entertain hopes of being able to extirpate their opponents, than towards the end of the year one thousand five hundred and Their brave and active leader, the fixty-nine. Prince of Condé, had been killed in the battle of Tarnac: they had afterwards received a dreadful overthrow in the battle of Moncontour; and the admiral Coligni, with the young Princess of Bourbon, had been obliged to retire, with the feeble remains of their shattered army, to the mountains of Gascony and Languedoc. There, however, they exerted themselves ftrenuously in making preparations for trying once more

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

more the fortune of war; and in a few months, they drew together a force sufficient to enable them to leave their retreat, and to enter the lifts against the royal army.

WHEN intelligence of this was brought to Queen-mother's plot the Queen-mother, who exercised at that time against the an unlimited authority in the government, she was equally exasperated and alarmed; and the refolved to employ other means than open force, to be avenged upon her enemies. She communicated her plan only to the king, the duke of Anjou, the cardinal of Lorraine, the duke of Guife, and Alberto Gondi, count of Retz; who all engaged to maintain the most inviolable fecrecy. Time only brought to light their dark defign. The protestants, they now believed, were not to be overcome by the force of arms; and it was refolved to have recourse to fraud and circumvention,

In pursuance of this plan, a new treaty with the princes of Navarre and the admiral was fet on foot, and foon afterwards concluded at St. Germains. By this treaty, the protestants received a free pardon of all their past offences, with liberty to make public profession of the reformed religion; and the princes and admiral were allowed, for their fecurity, to retain pofsession of Rochelle, Cognoc, La Charitè, or B 3

Mon-

B O O K XI. Montauban, on condition, that if the articles of the peace were observed, these places should be delivered to the king within the space of two years from the date of the present pacification.

THE protestant leaders entertained the same diffrust of the fincerity of the king and queenmother in this, as in all their former negociations. They were still afraid of putting themfelves in their power, and remained at a distance from Court, in the places of strength which had been affigned them. In order to remove their fuspicions, every species of artifice was employed. All the articles of the peace were punctually fulfilled. Strict orders were iffued to allow the protestants in all places to celebrate openly their religious affemblies; and in all the difputes which happened between the catholics and them, the latter were treated with indule gence, while the former had, on many occafions, reason to complain of injustice or severity. Charles embraced every opportunity to express the pleasure which he now enjoyed, in having restored tranquillity to his kingdom, and even when none but zealous catholics were present, he often declared how unalterably fixed his purpose was, to perform with strict fidelity, his engagements with the protestants. He had fufficiently experienced the folly of attempting to fubdue men's consciences by force; and

no confideration would make him return to his former unhappy measures; which he had found to be no less ineffectual for accomplishing the end intended, than they were destructive of his own repose, and pernicious to his fubieds. All his counfellors, except those who were partners in the bloody fecret, believed him to be fincere; and, by the accounts which they give of his discourse, added to the displeasure which they expressed at his change of conduct, they contributed to complete the delulion of the protestants. The admiral, however, still retained his wonted diffidence; and when urged by the king to come to court, and receive in person every proof that could be given him of fincere attachment, he declared, that it was impossible for him to think himself secure. where his mortal enemies of the family of Guife were possessed of so much power.

To have gratified the admiral by so great a concession as the immediate removal of the Guises, Charles knew would have had a suspicious aspect; and therefore he went no further at this time, than to assure him that his sears were groundless, and that his enemies were not masters as formerly. But soon after the duke of Guise and his brother lest the court, seemingly much disgusted with the measures which were there pursued. At the same time, other B 4

NI.

means of delufion were employed, more likely to produce the defired effect. Charles offered his fifter in marriage to the King of Navarre; and an ambaffador was fent to England, to negociate a match between the duke of Anjou and queen Elizabeth. But of all the instruments of deceit which he employed, there was none more efficacious, than the declaration which he made of his resolution to enter into war with the king of Spain. Philip had refused, he said, to grant him reparation for certain injuries which his fubjects had received from the Spaniards in America; and he was determined to take vengeance on that prince, by invading his dominions in the Netherlands. He offered the command of the army, which he talked of fending thither, to the admiral, and affured him that he would be entirely governed by his counsels, and those of the prince of Orange and count Lewis, in carrying on the war.

No proposal could be better calculated than this to blind the admiral's penetration. Confcious of superior military talents, he was naturally fond of war; sincere in his profession of the reformed religion, he was zealous to propagate and defend it; and he was strongly attached by sympathy of manners, as well as religious principles, to the princes of Nassau. Count Lewis was with him at Rochelle, when the

the proposal was delivered, and he contributed BOO not a little to banish from his mind the remains of those suspicions, which he still retained for the king's fincerity. Soon afterwards they both fet out for Paris, where they were received and treated with fo much effeem and confidence, as gave the admiral a full conviction that the fentiments both of the king and the queen-mother were in reality what they feemed. fromdence with some of the inhabitions of

CHARLES thought it necessary for his purpose to wear the mask for some time longer; and as he found that nothing had ferved fo effectually to lull the admiral's fuspicions as this last device, he affected to be extremely solicitous about making preparations for the war: and in the mean time defired count Lewis to repair to the frontiers of the Netherlands, to communicate his defign to the malcontents. and to hold them in readiness for the admiral's arrival with the troops. There was nothing farther from his intention than to begin hostilities. But no fooner were the Hugonots informed of the design on which count Lewis had fet out, than great numbers of them, prompted by their religious zeal, and by the restless military spirit of the age, flocked after him, and offered to affift him in any enterprise he should undertake. The lead proved the applied

LIWIS

B O O K XI. Lewis was himself of too active a temper to suffer them to remain long without employment. It was of the utmost consequence, he knew, towards the success of that expedition on which his brother was about to enter, as well as of the French invasion of the Netherlands, to acquire possession early of some foretisted town in the frontier provinces. With this view he had maintained a secret correspondence with some of the inhabitants of Mons; and he made himself master of that important city by the following stratagem.

and as he found what nothing had forved in ef-

HAVING left the confines of France, he arrived in the evening with five hundred horse and a thousand musqueteers at a wood in the neighbourhood of Mons, whence he fent forward ten or twelve of his foldiers, whom he felected on account of their fuperior address and resolution. They entered Mons in the evening, and lodged together in the fame inn. They gave out that they were dealers in wine; informed their host, that their servants were bringing a quantity of that liquor, and inquired at what hour the gate of the city, by which it was to be brought in, would be opened. They were told, that, for a small reward, the keeper would open it at any time; and early next morning, having bribed the keeper to open

it, they seized upon the keys, and dispersed BOOK the guards. Count Lewis, who was at hand with a hundred horse, immediately rushed in. and having taken possession of the gate, with a part of his troops, he traversed the principal streets of the city with the rest, and proclaimed to the inhabitants, that he was not come as an enemy, but as a friend, and that the prince of Orange was approaching with a powerful army, to affert their liberty and to deliver them from all those oppressive taxes which had been imposed upon them by the duke of Alvalogue occupation when continuer occupations.

His troops did not emount to mote than afreen Aur the citizens still remained within their houses, except a few who were privy to his defign; but he began to grow uneasy when he reflected on the small number of men that were with him, and to wonder that the rest of his troops were not come forward. It was to no purpose, he knew, to attempt keeping poffesfion of fo great a town with fo fmall a force. He rode out therefore as fast as he could towards the place where he had left his troops, who had loft their way, and were wandering in the wood. He conducted them immediately to the city; not without anxiety, left he frould find the gate shut against him on his return. But fuch was the consternation of the citizens, and their ignorance of what had passed, that none

1574.

8 0 0 K XI.

none of them had ventured to ftir without their houses. The gate was still open, and every thing in the town as quiet and motionless as when he left it. He then placed his guards at the feveral gates, and on the ramparts; and calling the magistrates together, explained to them his own, and his brother's defigns; giving them the strongest affurances that no violence should be committed by his foldiers. After which he commanded fuch of the citizens as he could not truft, to deliver up their arms; and ordered all of them to proceed as formerly in the pursuit of their customary occupations. His troops did not amount to more than fifteen hundred men; but he foon acquired a much greater force by the accession of many protestants, who hastened to his assistance from Picardy and Champaign with him, and to weater that the reft of his

THE loss of Mons affected the duke of Alva in the most sensible manner; and it gave him the greater uneasiness and concern, as it was altogether unexpected. Being no stranger to count Lewis's enterprising genius, he had kept an anxious eye upon all his motions, during his abode in France; especially after the peace of St. Germains, and the kind reception he

none

And the gast lived acquired han on this tenura.

Bentivoglio, p. 95. Meursii Auriacus, p. 79. Meteren, p. 95.

had met with from the king. The lateft ac- 100 K count which he had received of him from his fpies at Paris was, that he was playing at tennis; by which piece of intelligence, they meant to infinuate that he was more attentive to amusement, than to any serious pursuit. When the duke therefore was informed of his fuccess at Mons, he discovered the utmost impatience and chagrin. In the rage which it excited in him, throwing down his hat, and trampling upon it, " I have been deceived, he cried, by a Tuscan woman (meaning Catherine of Medicis), but ere long, instead of Tufcan lilies, the thall feel the fmart of Spanish thorns." in so all a made forces or grouply bas levies with the inmost discount, and at a very

His vexation was much increased by his knowledge of the great importance of the place which he had loft. He confidered that Mons was not only the capital of the province of Hainault, but one of the largest and most populous cities in the Low-Countries; that, being fituated in a marshy soil, it might easily be rendered impregnable; that although it was not in the line of the barrier towns, yet it was removed at fo small a distance from the frontier, that the possession of it must greatly facilitate the entrance of foreign troops into the provinces; and that either the French king, whofe

B O O K XI. whose conduct had for some time past had so hostile an appearance, or the prince of Orange, could easily furnish it with supplies.

THESE confiderations made him refolve to attempt the recovery of it without delay; but while he was making the preparations necessary for this purpose, he received intelligence of the revolution in Holland; and at the same time was informed, that the prince of Orange, having already collected a numerous army, was about to begin his march. Alva, far from shrinking at the view of so many impending dangers, exerted himfelf with great activity and vigour to repel them. He carried on his levies with the utmost diligence, and in a very fhort time found himself possessed of between five and fix thousand German horse and eighteen thousand foot of the same nation; befides fifty companies of Spaniards, and one hundred and fifty of Walloons, and other natives of the Netherlands. He would gladly have fent a part of these forces to recover the revolted cities in the maritime provinces, and the rest to the siege of Mons; but when he reflected on the difficulty which he must encounter in either of these two enterprises, he apprehended that his army, numerous as it was, could not with fafety be divided. He refolved

folved therefore to employ it, whole and en BOOK tire, against his enemies on one hand of him. before he should turn it to the other.

con mind the chairman for its first of bathlane.

1572.

STILL, however, he remained in great perplexity, finding it difficult to determine whether it was most expedient to begin with the slege of Mons, or the recovery of the maritime provinces. And to affift him in deciding this important question, he called a council of his principal officers; when the marquis of Vitelli. one of the first in rank, as well as in military merit, advised him earnestly to begin with the latter, and supported his opinion by observing; "That although the interior provinces were liable to be invaded from the lide of France or Germany, yet it would not be difficult to recover whatever cities should be lost in those provinces, as the inhabitants were in general more loyal than those of Holland and Zealand, and much less infected with the spirit of innovation in religion. That the Huguenots under count Lewis were destitute of means to fupport themselves, and must soon be disperse ed; for he could not be perfuaded that the French king, who had hitherto flewn fo much zeal for the true religion, would ever debafe himself so far, as to favour the attempts of his rebellious subjects to subvert it. The German forces under the prince of Orange, undiffernind 's formed

BOOK ed and tumultuary, were actuated in their prefent warfare, by no other motives but those of pay and plunder. And if they were disappointed in their expectation of these, there was little ground to doubt that they would choose rather to return home, after taking vengeance on their leaders, than expose themselves to the fatigue and danger of belieging towns and fortreffes. We may therefore, without anxiety," continued he, " put off the siege of Mons, and the defence of the inland frontier, till a more convenient feafon shall arrive. But the state of the maritime provinces admits not of the least delay. The people there are universally infected with herefy. They have conceived a degree of phrenzy, and indulged themselves in the most extravagant excesses against the church and the king. Their fituation, strong by nature, will foon be rendered impregnable. Every passage of a river and canal will require an army to force it, and every fiege, a campaign to finish it. By the sea, and by the rivers, they can be always richly furnished with provisions; they can every hour receive fuccour from France, Germany, or England; and will be able, by their naval force, to prevent the king's army from receiving supplies from Spain. It is there too, the prince of Orange, for many years, was governor. There he possesses several large estates; and he has formed

formed there numerous and close connexions with persons of the greatest influence in the country. As it was in these provinces he first erected the standard of rebellion, it is in them he intends to fix the seat of that usurped dominion which he is so ambitious to maintain. Let us attack our enemy first in his strong hold; and when we have driven him from thence, we shall find it much easier to prevent him from establishing himself in any other quarter."

Such were the reasons which Vitelli gave for advising the duke of Alva to postpone the fiege of Mons; and, if his advice had been followed, it is probable that the republic of the United Provinces would never have been formed. The people had not yet had time to put the cities into a proper state of defence, and they could not have long relifted fo great a force as the duke of Alva might have employed to subdue them. Amsterdam and Middleburg were still unshaken in their allegiance. With the ships belonging to these two wealthy cities, and those which he would have received from Spain, a fleet might have been equipped superior to that of the protestants; who must have been foon reduced to the necessity of fubmitting to whatever terms Philip might have thought fit to impose.

VOL. II.

Ç

No

B O O K XI.

No fuch pernicious consequences as those which were foretold by Vitelli, could have followed from allowing the enemy to remain for some time in possession of Mons; nor even from the conquest which the prince of Orange might have made of other places. In an open country, such as the interior provinces, the sate of towns must depend entirely on the number and discipline of the armies employed to attack or defend them; and in both these respects, the duke of Alva had reason to believe that he would be at all times able to maintain his superiority; especially if, by first reducing the maritime provinces, he could keep open his communication by sea with Spain.

But it is infinitely easier for men to judge concerning matters of such nice deliberation, after the event has happened, than when they are about to enter upon action. It ought to be considered, that Alva had not yet experienced the difficulties attending the siege of towns, fituated in a country so much intersected by the sea, by rivers, and canals, as the maritime provinces; and could not foresee those amazing exertions which the people made, first in their preparations for war, and afterwards in the defence of their cities when attacked. He had likewise reason to entertain suspicions of the hostile intentions of the French king. He dreaded

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

dreaded the havor which would be made by the army of the prince of Orange, in the richer and more fertile provinces; and thought it would bring an indelible flain upon his honour, if he did not endeavour to prevent it. Besides these motives, it is not improbable, considering the natural violence of his temper, that he was in some degree influenced, in the resolution which he formed, by his personal jealoufy of the prince of Orange, and his defire of disappointing a second time the attempts of one who had formerly rivalled him in the favour of his prince.

troops which he had monifold to ten

languered Joulin in this WHATEVER were his motives, he refolved to begin his operations with the siege of Mons; and to delay the reduction of Holland till he should disengage himself from his enemies on the fouthern frontier. In order to increase the number of his forces, he commanded the garria fons of Rotterdam and Delfshaven, the only towns in Holland in which he had any garrifons left, to join him; and immediately fent off his fon Frederic de Toledo, accompanied by Noircarmes and Vitelli, with a part of the troops, to form the blockade of Mons.

The fiege of

THE inhabitants of that city, though suspicious at first of count Lewis's intentions, were now well fatisfied with his government, and

were

190 k

were folicitous to provide for their defence against the Spaniards. They assisted him with great alacrity in completing their fortifications. They were active in laying in military stores and provisions; and having repeatedly sallied out for this purpose, after Toledo's arrival in their neighbourhood, they had several rencounters with his troops.

Lewis had, fome time before, fent the Sieur de Jehlis to Paris, to inform the king of his fuccess, and to folicit the speedy march of the troops which he had promifed to fend to his affiftance. Charles received Jenlis in the most gracious manner, affected to be extremely happy with the accounts which he had brought him, and gave him authority to levy forces; hoping that, before they could take the field, he would be able to put an end to the scene of dissimulation which he had fo long been acting. But the admiral, who was allowed to exercise an unlimited power in the administration, pushed forward the levies with greater vigour than the king intended; and, in a few weeks, Jenlis was ready to fet out with between four and five thousand foot and four hundred horse. The admiral and count Lewis concurred in advising him to direct his march by the way of Cambray. that he might avoid being intercepted by the enemy, and join the army of the prince of Orange.

Orange. But Jenlis refused to comply with FO this wholesome counsel. He vainly hoped to be able, with his own forces alone, to oblige the Spaniards to quit the fiege; and he wished to secure this honour to himself, rather than leave it to be reaped by the prince of Orange. Notice was fent privately to Toledo, from the court of France, of the route which he was to take, and of the time of his departure. Toledo immediately drew off his forces from the blockade, and advanced to meet him on the frontier; being desirous to engage at a distance from the town, left count Lewis should fally out, and attack the Spaniards in the rear, when they were engaged in battle with Jenlis. Toledo had reached a village called St. Ghislain. at the distance of a few miles from Mons, when he was informed that the enemy had entered a neighbouring wood, and that upon their coming out from it he might attack them with great advantage. He ordered his cavalry to march first, and followed as fast as he was able with the infantry. The cavalry had almost reached the borders of the wood, when they perceived a hundred of the enemy's horse that had been fent before to reconnoitre. These the Spaniards instantly attacked, and drove back into the wood, purfuing them closely till they reached the main army, which was thrown into confufion by the precipitate flight of the fugitives.

X1.

In a very little time the whole Spanish army arrived, and began the attack, before Jenlis had time to draw up his men in order of battle. The French made refiftance, however, for two hours with great bravery; but at last they gave way, and endeavoured to fave themselves by Upwards of twelve hundred fell on flight, the field, and many were killed in the pursuit, partly by the Spaniards, and partly by the country people, who took cruel vengeance for the injuries which they had received from them in their march, Jenlis himself was taken prifoner, and conducted to the citadel of Antwerp; where, having died fuddenly, his death was ascribed to poison. The loss sustained by the Spanish army was inconsiderable.

Alva's arrival before Moss. Toledo returned to Mons in a few days after this diffinguished victory; and soon after the duke of Alva arrived. This cautious general having drawn a double trench and rampart round his army, by which it was rendered secure on one side against the sallies of the besieged, and on the other, against any sudden attack that might be made upon it by the prince of Orange, he immediately erected several batteries, and began his fire in different quarters with great sury. The besieged discovered no less vigour in their desence; which was conducted with great prudence, as well as the most

most indefatigable activity, by count Lewis, feconded in all his operations by the celebrated La Noue, who had gained distinguished renown in the civil wars of France.

have known that he published an edici to

most skill and intrepidity, they had no hopes of Orange of being able to raife the fiege, without the therlands. affiltance of the prince of Orange. William had already penetrated into the Low Countries. and advanced as far as Ruremond. There he stopped, and demanded a supply of provisions

Bur although the belieged displayed the ut- Arrival of the prince

for his troops. The government of the town was in the hands of zealous catholics, who not only rejected his request, but accompanied their refusal with a degree of haughtines and infolence, by which the prince and his army, were highly exasperated. There were many of the citizens, however, with whom he had formerly held intelligence. Having at this time renewed his correspondence with them, he made a brisk attack upon one of the gates. The catholics fultained it with spirit; but while they were thus employed, the protestant inhabitants fnatched the opportunity, and introduced the affailants by another gate into the city. It was not then in the power of the prince of Orange to reftrain the fury of his fol-They plundered many of the citizens, violated the churches, and put to death, with

Dendremone

great

# 40 H

great barbarity, several priests, and other religionists. By some popula historians, William himself has been blamed on account of these enormities. But these writers seem neither to have known that he published an edict to prevent them, not to have considered, that as he could not but perceive that violent ineasures were calculated to hurt his cause, by alienating the affections of the people in other cities, so his conduct on innumerable other occasions furnishes the strongest proof of his utter averagion to all cruelty and outrage.

WILLIAM's acquifition of Ruremond was of great importance, as it put him in possession of a commodious passage over the Maese; he therefore left a garrison to defend it, and hastened afterwards to Hainault. The citizens of Mechlin having been gained over to his interest by the Sieur de Dorp, opened their gates to receive him, There he likewise left a garrison, The citizens of Louvain refused to admit him within their walls; but, on his preparing to employ force, they confented to grant him a contribution; of which he accepted, in order to fave the time which the fiege would have cost him. Nivelle, Diest, Sichem, Tillemont, and several other towns surrendered to him; ome through fear, and others through the affection which they bore to his cause or person, Dendremond

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

Dendremend and Oudenarde were taken by furprife, and great irregularities were commitmed by the foldiers in both these places, especially in the latter, where, nowithstanding their leader's prohibition, they duce more indulged that ungovernable fury with which their bigody inspired them against the ecclesiastics of the Romish communion.

300 M

WILLIAM made his stay at each of these places as short as possible. He did not, however, arrive in Hainault till the beginning of September, when his army amounted to more than twenty thousand men.

So great an army could not be supported long without more ample funds than he possessived. The States of Holland had sent him a considerable sum. The exiles had transmitted to him a part of the money that arose from their captures. His other friends had raised contributions proportioned to their abilities. But so great had been the expence of levying, equipping, and maintaining his troops, and such immense sums had been laid out in purchasing artillery and military stores, that he had occasion still for all the supplies which had been promised him by the court of France.

Bur his hopes of relief from that quarter were now utterly extinguished. The plan of treachery

#### HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

SKO)O)R XII treachery above-mentioned which had been carried on for two years, with a degree of perfeverance as well as of diffirmulation that has not its parallel in history, was at this time broughtto acconclution. The artifices employed ed to delude the protestant leaders had at length furceded, and they were almost all caught in the net which had been prepared for their designation.

THE admiral had remained at court for feveveral months, during which time Charles gave him every day fresh marks of affection and esteem. That deceitful monarch had shewn likewise a particular, attachment to the admiral's friends, and was perpetually furrounded with them at council, in his own apartments, and when he went abroad. With his permisfion, the admiral had left Paris, and gone to Chatillon, where he staid for some time to settle his private affairs. This indulgence was calculated to create in him the most assured confidence: fince it could hardly be supposed, that if the king had intended him any harm, by enticing him to court, he would have allowed him to depart from it. To fuch a height was the admiral's fecurity now rifen, that when Charles expressed his desire of having all grounds of enmity between him and the Guifes removed, he readily confented that they should come to Paris,

Paris, and agreed to refer the feveral points of \$ 0.0 difference between himself and them to the king's decision. In a few days after, the duke of Guife arrived, attended by a numerous train of dependants; and a formal reconciliation was made in presence of the king. But it soon appeared how little fincerity there was on one fide, in the professions which were uttered on that no ma character ... I on or

La Boune (who was fent in As a prelude to the final catastrophe, the queen of Navarre, a princefs who by her spirit and magnanimity had long been formidable to the catholics, died, after a short illness, which was generally ascribed to poison. And an attempt was made, by a partifan of Guife, to affaffinate the admiral. By this last event the protestants were greatly alarmed; but the king and queen-mother, by redoubling their diffimulation, and affuming, with confummate artifice, the appearance of deep concern for what had happened, prevented the admiral from fuspecting them to have been privy to it, and diverted him and the other protestant leaders from forming any vigorous refolution of providing for their fafety. They were all found therefore defenceless and unprepared. of the kingdom, between hery and fixed

In that horrid scene which passed on the night of the twenty-fourth of August, the duke

(

1572

0.0 k of Guife was the bringinal actor. But his favage spirit quickly diffused itself into every breat; and no catholic declined to affif him in the execution of his bloody purpose. The admiral, to whom, not many days before, he had pledged his friendship, was among the first who fell a facrifice to his fury. This great man died with a fortitude and tranquillity fuitable to his character. "Young man," faid he to La Besme (who was sent into his apartment by the duke of Guile, while Guile himself remained without till the deed was perpetrated). w you ought to reverence grey hairs; but proceed to the execution of your defign; you can fhorten my life but a very little." While he was faying this, the affaffin plunged his fword into his breaft. At the fame time all his domeftics and friends were murdered; among whom was the brave Guerchy, his lieutenant, and his fon-in-law, the amiable Teligny, who had won even the favage heart of Charles, and whose engaging aspect suspended for some time the lifted hands of his murderers. But it does not belong to this history to enter more particularly into the detail of this transaction. Upwards of ten thousand protestants were masfacred in Paris alone, and in the other cities of the kingdom, between fifty and fixty thou-

#### PHILIP HIZKING OF SPAIN!

Or this borrid maffacre, the first ides is faid 800 a to have been fuggefied to the queen-mother by Philip, through the duke of Alva, at conferences held at Bayonne in one thousand five hundred and fifty-nine; and it is certain, that intelligence of it was received at Madrid with the utmost joy. Philip offered public thanksgiving to heaven for the destruction of his enemies; and wrote to Charles a congratulatory letter on the subject. On the other hand, it filled the protestants in the Low-Countries with horror and consternation. Their hopes of obtaining deliverance from the Spanish yoke, through the powerful aid of France, had been raised to the greatest height, and their dejection now was in proportion to their former expectations. In the part to be the stand and over.

Nothing could be more galling to the prince of Orange than the news of this difaster. Besides the cruel disappointment of finding a powerful monarch his mortal enemy, whom he had so much reason to believe to be his friend, he knew not what dangerous effect this unexpected revolution might produce upon his troops, especially as some of them were subjects of France, and had entered into his service, under a belief that their king was to support them in their present enterprise.

includes and friends were medicine a low

PERCEIVING,

PERCEIVING, therefore, the necessity of pushing forward his operations with the utmost vigour, and being perfuaded, that, without of the prince fome fignal instance of success, he could not long fupport his army, he advanced without delay towards Mons; being refolved to try every expedient, not only to raise the siege, but if possible to bring on a general engagement.

> THE duke easily penetrated into his design, and omitted nothing in his power to prevent him from carrying it into execution. After the arrival of feveral German auxiliaries in his camp, his army was superior in number, as it had always been in discipline, to that of the prince; and he could not have much reason to dread the event of a battle, in case he should find it unavoidable. But knowing that the fate of battles is decided fometimes by accidents, against which no human prudence can provide; and confidering, that the prince's army, through the scantiness of his funds, would probably foon fall to pieces of itself, he refumed the principles on which he had acted in the time of William's former expedition, and refolved to avoid exposing his troops to any unnecessary risk; hoping, that, by tiring out the enemy, he should be able to triumph over them-

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN!

them without fighting. With this view, while he invested the town on every side, and prevented any supplies from being thrown into it, he entrenched his camp to strongly, as to render it entirely impracticable for the prince of Orange to force his lines. He fortisted the several passes by which the town might be approached in the strongest manner, watched over every operation himself, with indefatigable attention; and sorbade his men to engage in the slightest skirmish with the enemy, whatever provocation they might receive.

AFTER having taken these precautions, he sent out five hundred horse to reconnoitre. They were met by nearly the same number of German horse, commanded by count Henry, William's youngest brother, who being ambitious to distinguish himself in this his first campaign, attacked the Spaniards with uncommon sury, and after killing many of them, broke their ranks, and drove them back in great confusion. The prince himself followed soon afterwards with all his army, and drew it up in battle array before the duke of Alva's camp.

But Alva, more determined than ever fince the repulse of the cavalry to adhere to his plan, kept all his men within their entrenchments. The prince of Orange omitted nothing in his

100 k

30

2 00 K

power to induce him to change his purpose. He shifted his ground, intercepted the convoys of provisions, attacked foragers, and sent out parties on every side, with a view to entice the enemy to quit their lines.

THERE were persons in the Spanish camp who condemned their general's conduct on this occasion, and exhorted him to put to proof that courage of which the enemy were so extremely oftentatious. Among these was the archbishop of Cologne', whose ardent spirit breathed nothing but war and battle, and who could not relish those cautious maxims by which the duke of Alva had resolved to regulate his conduct. Alva remained equally firm against the importunities of his friends, and the arts that were practifed by the enemy. It was a maxim often in his mouth, that as all human events are precarious, the most precarious of all is a battle: to which he added, that it ought not to be the aim of a general to fight, but to overcome; and that there were other means by which this aim might be accomplished more effectually than by fighting.

But although his conduct was not approved by the archbishop of Cologne, he had the satis-

" The count of Ifenberg.

faction

100 K

faction to know that it gave the deepest uneasihels to the prince of Orange; who perceived, that if an opportunity did not offer foon of firiking forme important blow, by which he might raise the siege, it would not be possible for him to keep his army together. His finances did not enable him to bring provisions from a distance, and all the country round had been plundered by the Spaniards. Being driven therefore to despair, he made a bold effort to break through the enemy's entrenchments; but this adventurous attempt, which nothing could justify but the urgent motive that incited him, was attended with such an iffue as he had reason to expect. His men were bravely repulfed, and a confiderable loss sustained.

HE now relinquished all hopes of either raising the siege, or forcing an engagement; and he resolved to leave Hainault, after attempting to introduce such supplies into the town as might enable the garrison to hold out till winter, when the duke of Alva would be obliged to retire. For this purpose, he made choice of two thousand horse and one thousand foot, the slower of his army. There was only a single pass by which they could have access to the town, and at that place Alva had built a strong fort, of which he committed the defence to a select body of Spanish troops, under the com-

B O O K XI.

mand of Sancio d'Avila and Julia Romero. Notwithstanding this precaution, which lest hardly a possibility of success, the troops destinged for the relief of Mons advanced towards the pass with the utmost intrepidity. Romero and D'Avila received them with equal intrepidity; and were seconded by the guns of the fort. The combat was hot and surious. There was a brisk cannonading during the time of it from the two armies, and from the town; but the fire from the fort did the greatest execution; and the Germans, after several hundreds of their number had fallen, were at last obliged to abandon their attempt.

The prince is obliged to leave Hainault.

THE prince of Orange now convinced of the impossibility of relieving the besieged in oppofition to fo powerful an army, immediately de-The duke of Alva followed him next day with most of his forces, and in every movement discovered the most consummate skill; so that he at once prevented the prince from returning towards Mons, and avoided being reduced himself to the necessity of fighting. It was not long before he learned that there was not the fame good order in the prince's army, which had hitherto been observed in it. William's authority over his troops had fuffered greatly by the failure of his late attempts; and he was unable any longer to maintain that perfect perfect discipline, without which no army, however numerous, can be formidable.

that a By the favour of the high that they elenged

ALVA readily embraced the opportunity which this circumstance afforded him. Having taken a view in person of the enemy's quarters, he refolved to attack them in the night. He committed the charge of this enterprise to Julio Romero, and gave him two thousand chosen infantry, who were ordered to be ready to march in the middle of the night, each with a thirt over his armour, to enable them to diftinguish one another. They fell with great fury on the Germans, who were stationed to guard the camp; and as most of them were fast afleep, they made dreadful havoc among them, till the alarm was communicated to the reft. who were foon roufed by the groans and shrieks of the wounded. At first, believing that the whole Spanish army had attacked them, they fled precipitately. The affailants had in the beginning fet fire to the tents, and many of the Germans perished in the flames. But this circumstance, by which the horror of the scene was augmented, faved the German army from destruction. It discovered the number of the Spaniards, and made it easier for the prince of Orange to draw up his men, and to know in what quarter he might find the enemy. But the affailants, perceiving that the whole camp Muodi

D 2

8 0 0 R Xf. was up in arms, made their retreat in time, and eluded the vengeance which they faw approaching. By the favour of the night they escaped with little loss, after having put to the sword near five hundred of the Germans.

THE confequences of this difafter were more pernicious to the prince of Orange than the difafter itself. It filled his troops with consternation, and gave them a formidable idea of the Spaniards, whom, on account of their having fo often declined fighting, they had been accustomed to despise. Without waiting for orders, they haftily decamped with one confent, and left a part of their baggage a prey to the enemy. They had not candour to acknowledge that the misfortune which had befallen them on the preceding night was owing to their negligence in obeying orders. They were disposed to throw the blame of it upon their general, and began to complain, that inflead of enriching them with spoil, he had brought them into the Low-Countries, only to expose them to perpetual hardships and diffress. He found means, however, at this time, to quiet their minds, and in some measure to rectify their opinion of his conduct.

THE duke of Alva was on this occasion urged by his officers to pursue the prince till he should

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

should drive him entirely out of the Netherlands; but he repeated the old maxim, That it is wifer to make a bridge for a flying enemy, than to reduce them to despair; and returned to the fiege. the people longed for his ari

37

THE prince of Orange led his troops to He difficulty Mechlin; and having remained there for fome days to recruit them after their fatigue, he continued his march northwards, till he had brought them as far as Orsoy in the dutchy of Cleves. At that place their ill-humour broke out afresh with greater violence than ever, and they began to hold private meetings, in which they deliberated, whether, in order to procure payment of their arrears, they should not deliver him up to the duke of Alva. The principal officers received this ungenerous propofal with horror and indignation. They were convinced that the prince had done every thing that could have been done by a general of the most confummate abilities. They knew that he had begun his enterprise with the highest probability of fuccess, and that his failure in it had been almost entirely owing to the treacherous dealings of the French king; by trufting to whom, he had engaged in a very different plan of operations from that which he would otherwife have adopted. By these considerations the officers were entirely fatisfied; and

through

FOOK KI

through their influence, the common foldiers were perfuaded to relinquish their perfidious design. The army was immediately disbanded; and William set out for Holland, where the people longed for his arrival.

The furren-

His retreat from Mons gave his brother, count Lewis, who was naturally of a fanguine temper, the deepest affliction. And this, joined to the extreme fatigue which he had undergone for feveral months before, threw him into a violent diftemper, which prevented him for some time from attending to the siege. But during his confinement La Noue conducted the defence with fo much skill and intrepidity, that Alva, despairing of being able before winter to take the town by force, was willing to agree to fuch terms of capitulation, as count Lewis thought it not dishonourable to accept. These were, that the French, count Lewis, the Flemish nobility, and all who were not inhabitants of the place, should leave it with their arms and baggage; and that fuch of the inhabitants as had borne arms might leave it with their effects, but not their arms. That fuch of them as were catholics might remain in the town unmolested; but that all the protestants should not only depart from the town, but from the Netherlands; and that all. persons, whether citizens or foreigners, should take

take an oath, that they would not carry arms for the space of a year, either against the king of France or the king of Spain, from which oath count Lewis alone was exempted. This capitulation was figned by the dukes of Alva and Medina-cœli, by Frederic de Toledo, and the baron de Noicarmes; and all the conditions of it were punctually fulfilled,

OOK

In this manner was Mons recovered from the Enormities protestants, after it had been more than three months in their possession. The duke of Alva felt no anxiety with regard to the recovery of the cities which had received the prince of Orange. They were neither ftrongly fortified nor fufficiently provided with garrifons to defend them. The first against which he turned his arms was Mechlin; and he ordered his fon to lead thither the Spanish troops, who having received no pay for fome time, advanced like fo many famished wolves, with a refolution to fatiate their rapacity by plundering the inhabitants.

On their arrival, the garrison which had been left in the town by the prince of Orange feemed determined to make refistance; but finding the citizens averse from co-operating with them, and despairing of being able, without their affiftance, to hold out long, they deferted

B O O K XI: ferted the place in the night; and next morning all the priefts and ecclefiaftics went in for lemn procession to Toledo's tent, to deprecate his vengeance. When they were pleading the cause of the unhappy anxious inhabitants, and representing that only a small number of them had been guilty, while by far the greatest part had preferved their allegiance; the foldiers, apprehensive that Toledo might listen to this apology, and disappoint them of their prey, rushed forward to the city, and broke into it, fome by the gates, and others, by the help of scaling ladders, over the walls. Then spreading themselves like a deluge, they gave a loose to every species of violence; butchering some, and plundering all without mercy. There was no diffinction made of age, fex, or condition. Virgins and matrons were violated before the eyes of their parents and husbands. The churches and convents were pillaged as well as private houses; and the nuns were not exempted from that brutal luft and fury, which the Spaniards indulged without controul,

Justified by the duke of Alva. THE duke of Alva was sensible how great an odium must attend such a barbarous treatment of a city, which had hitherto been distinguished for its sidelity; yet he chose to justify what had been done, and in a few days afterwards published a manifesto, in which he declared,

that

BOOK N

that the citizens had suffered no more than their rebellion had deferved; that justice was not yet entirely fatisfied; that their crime merited a still severer punishment, than barely to be deprived of their effects; and that other cities which had already imitated, or should afterwards imitate, their example, might expect, fooner or later, to meet with the fame fate. Of the facrilege that had been committed on the churches and convents, and the shocking treatment of the weaker fex, no mention was made in the manifesto, and no excuse was ever offered for passing over these enormities with impunity. Great arrears, faid the apologists of Alva, were at that time due to the foldiers; and, as he could not fatisfy them, he either thought it reasonable to allow them to take a compensation for their pay; or, being well acquainted with their ferocious tempers, he was afraid to exercise his authority. The Spanish foldiers themselves, though little fcrupulous with respect to crimes contrary to the laws of nature, justice, and humanity, were afterwards, agreeably to the character of their nation, touched with remorfe on account of their violation of the churches; and in order to atone for their guilt, they hearkened to the dictates of fuperstition, and laid out a portion of their plunder in building a house for the jesuits in Antwerp.

Meteren, p. 107. Campana, p. 97. Bentivoglio, p. 114.

35721 Cruelty of the Spaniards at Zutphen.

ALVA having gone to Maestricht, where he dismissed his German horse, went from thence to Bruffels, while the Spaniards were permitted to remain at Mechlin for feveral days, which they employed in collecting their plunder, and fending it off in boats to Antwerp, to be exposed to sale. Toledo then led them against the other cities which had received German garrifons. These garrisons fled on his approach; and the people agreed to pay exorbitant contributions to fave their cities from being facked: nor did he meet with any opposition in his progress, till he came to Zutphen, which was at that time a place of confiderable strength. It was defended with a wall flanked with baftions, and furrounded with a deep ditch. The Isfel washes the fortifications on one fide, the Berkel on another; and the ground on the other two fides is so extremely wet and marshy as to render the place, for the greatest part of the year, almost inaccessible. But unfortunately for the protestants in garrison, they could not avail themfelves of these advantages at this juncture; the frost having set in with uncommon severity several days before the arrival of Toledo. He found no difficulty therefore in approaching the place with his batteries, and he foon made a breach in the wall. He was preparing for an affault, when he received intelligence, that the garrison, and all such as had rendered themfelves AVJA.

felves obnoxious, had gone out of the town by BOOK the opposite gate; and that the citizens who remained were now, when left at liberty to act agreeably to their inclination, willing immediately to furrrender at discretion. But Toledo having, by the small resistance which the garrison had made, got a pretext for plundering this unhappy people, refused to listen to any terms of accommodation, and ordered his troops to advance. They entered the town without opposition, and repeated there the fame shocking barbarities which they had exercifed in Mechlin, with this difference, that as there was much less booty in Zutphen, to fatiffy their rapacity, they indulged their cruelty fo much the more. They put to the fword all the citizens who fell in their way, men and women without distinction; and when they were tired with flaughtering, they cast great numbers into the Issel, and indulged themselves in the horrid joy of beholding the unhappy fufferers perish in the stream. By the sword and water, above five hundred perished; and the rest were obliged to redeem their lives by the most oppreffive contributions, which were fo cruelly exacted, that the living had reason to envy the fate of those whom death had delivered from fuch intolerable mifery '.

Meteren, p. 110. Bentivoglio, p. 115. Meursii Auriacus, p. 98.

3 (2-6) 8

-felves ofmostons, had going out of the roll liv the opposite gate; and classific chiefly also, othe or modified the way when the accident benished agreement on the principal and an existing a ferrordistriction farmender at different. James I alle. do having, by the fetale offinies which the garifon had maile, got a pictore for plantage ing this whappy people, infriedred then to and her was buy the all throughout the amount you ance of broken of P. K. of Cohe of before wedness representation and repeated there the freed the clang barbaries which there had exerclied in Meanin, with this different of the day there was rough less boors in Zahunga, collence of virtues riods bay bags rade while our rade vi mach the spores of they not to the bit met all the Thursday book ment of a strain Airlist case a few 3 bons where water mater bear a motioning to any the in address today this each policymous Walland the set to exemple bath her tipe , left will be romant languages est and the land of salasticity performance the set of the state and another of as a first the comment becomes and after the -do fear bis of good could party and the tracker positive reason before the contract person with All copy of maker week provide any man have hely and the second in the second we should be second · it is the the state of the second of the s The state of the s

HISTORY OF THE ALICH OF

### from Spain, 1500, in prolonge of the States, of Hora Sant One Con St. In St. declaration, that he would pake it a the

of the centh and twentieth penales, on condi-

OF THE REIGN OF THE means by which the money need the for the

#### kings-fervice might be raifed. Incimen PHILIP THE SECOND,

Halland, by the count of Rofkie who, in the KING OF SPAIN.

afficiable at the Heave, sto consider of what

#### edger taxes they would foblique to the room BOOK XIL

WHILE the Spanish army was employed sook in the fiege of Mons, and in Subduing the other revolted towns in the fouthern provinces, the people of Holland and Zealand tions in Hol improved the leifure which was afforded them, Zealand, by taking every precaution in their power to fecure themselves from being again reduced under the Spanish yoke. They increased the number of their ships of war, completed their fortifications, and levied fo great a number of forces, as, with the great advantages of their fituation, they hoped would be fufficient for their defence. The world should sat or hold

yerre come a light to ano jet design efd it was

SIDW

HOOK 146

. 282x

Bliffy patter

on's minat sidt to saver

bus dice ganeg door

.sauf al

8

Philip paffes from the taxes of the noth and noth penny in June.

BEFORE the duke of Alva set out for Mons, he had, agreeably to orders transmitted to him from Spain, read, in presence of the States of Brabant, Artois, Hainault, and Flanders, a declaration, that he would pass from the taxes of the tenth and twentieth pennies, on condition that the States would devise some other means by which the money necessary for the king's service might be raised. Intimation was made of this concession to the States of Holland, by the count of Bossut; who, in the name of the governor, commanded them to assemble at the Hague, to consider of what other taxes they would substitute in the room of those which had been formerly imposed.

His concelfion diffega ded by the States.

Accid

ENCHA!

tions inc

This concession, which, if it had been made fooner, might have prevented the revolt of the maritime provinces, was not attended with the desired effect. It excited in the minds of the people the highest degree of joy and exultation; but they did not think themselves indebted for it, either to the king or the duke of Alva. They ascribed it wholly to the dread that was entertained of the prince of Orange, to whom alone they thought themselves bound for this first instance of attention that had been shewn to their inclination or interest since Philip's accession to the throne. They could not doubt, that if his apprehensions of the German army

were

TYPE IN

were removed, Alva would be again permitted to refume the pursuit of that plan of tyranny which he had been obliged to fuspend. They were well acquainted with the vindictive spirit which animated Philip's counfels. They knew that, for much flighter offences than those of which they had been guilty, many thousands of their countrymen had fuffered the most cruel death; and they believed, that whatever affurances might be given them of pardon, the memory of their guilt would never be extinguished but in their blood. By the unrelenting cruelty which had been exercised against the protestants, added to the contempt which had been shewn to their fundamental rights and laws, the people were entirely alienated from Philip's person and government. They were convinced that he had refolved to treat them henceforth, not as subjects but as slaves; and they had long repined and murmured at their fate. sant for to the Stimonar or sale to routing

From the time of Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, all the protestants who had escaped from the cruelty of the inquisitors, had carefully concealed their sentiments, and conformed to the established worship; but having of late received a great increase of number, by the return of many of the exiles, they had thrown off the mask; and it now appeared, that

While between 11 w

B O O K XII.

valle prime

# 0.0 K

by far the greatest part of the inhabitants, and even of the deputies of the States, were strongly artached to the reformed relgions. Their religious real co-operated with their abhorrence of the Spanish tyranny; and both together infpired them with a fixed unalterable purpose to defend their liberty to the last.

They meet at Dort,

PROMPTED by these motives, the States paid no regard to the order for affembling at the Hagne, transmitted to them by Boffue; and that they might the more frongly express their contempt of the governor's authority, they appointed an affembly to be held at Dort. Of this affembly they gave early notice to the prince of Orange, and increated him to fend one of his most faithful friends, properly instructed, to affift them in their deliberations. The perfon whom the prince made choice of for this purpose, was the Sieur de St. Aldegond, the author of the compromise, who had long been well acquainted with William's most secret views and fentiments, clavia to once and most Netherlands, all the protestants who had eff

and enter into engagements with the prince of Orange. ST. Aldegond readily undertook the task imposed upon him; and at the first meeting of the States, gave them thanks in the name of the prince, for the intimation which they had sent him, of their resolution to vindicate their liberty under his direction. "The prince was conscious,

conscious, he said, of being seriously interest- BOOK ed in the welfare of all the provinces, and of none more than those of Holland and Zealand. which for feveral years had been the objects of his particular attention. From time to time he had heard with indignation and grief, of the diffress and misery to which they had been reduced through the Spanish tyranny; and there was nothing which he defired more ardently, than to be inftrumental in recovering for them those invaluable rights, which for ages past had proved the fource of their prosperity. In order to accomplish this end, he had spared neither expence nor labour. He had failed in his former attempt for their deliverance, not (he hoped, they would believe) through any negligence or misconduct, but through the fuperior power and more copious resources of the enemy. In his prefent armament, he had already expended all that remained of his once ample fortune; and as in levying his army, he had trusted in a great measure to the assistance which they had promifed him; now was the time to fulfil that promife, and to enable him to begin his military operations without delay."

THE States who knew the truth of what St. Aldegond had reprefented, and were fenfible how much the fuccess of William's enterprise VOL. II. E depended

BOOK XII,

1572.

depended on his receiving an immediate supply, fent him without delay a hundred thousand florins, which they borrowed from the more wealthy citizens; and promifed to fend him more as foon as it could be raifed, either from the ordinary taxes, or from the revenues of the monasteries, which were at that time converted into a fund for carrying on the war. After this transaction, a solemn declaration in writing was delivered to St. Aldegond, in which they engaged to acknowledge the prince of Orange as the only lawful governor or stadtholder of the province; appointed him commander in chief of all their forces by sea and land; and engaged, that, without his confent, they should not liften to any terms of peace which might be offered: St. Aldegond, on the other hand, engaging in the name of the prince, that he would not lay down his arms, nor enter into any accommodation or treaty, without the knowledge and approbation of the States 1.

Their dif-

THE States exerted themselves strenuously to perform their promises of supplies. They sent him two hundred thousand storins, which he received at Ruremonde, in his way to Mons, and gave him security for three hundred thousand. When the news were brought them of

8 Meursi Auriacus, p. 84.

his retreat, and the necessity under which he found himself of disbanding his army, they were exceedingly dejected; and were filled with the most disquieting apprehensions, when they considered that the duke of Alva, having no enemy in the field to oppose his progress, was now at liberty to employ all his forces united, in taking vengeance on them, for their contempt of his authority.

B'O O K XII.

THEIR diffress was much increased by the inflexible obstinacy of the city of Amsterdam, in adhering to the Spanish interest; which did not proceed so much from the general inclination of the citizens, as from the care which the duke of Alva had taken to preferve the government of that city in the hands of the most rigid catholics. By an order of the States, Lumey count de la Marc had befieged it with a confiderable body of troops; but after making fome progress in his operations, he despaired of fuccess, and suddenly raised the siege. He ascribed the miscarriage of his attempt to the negligence of the States, in supplying him with provisions. The States, on the other hand, threw the blame entirely upon the count. They had been for fome time past extremely diffatisfied with his conduct, on account of the cruelties which he had allowed his troops to exercise against the catholics; and they believ-

Amfferdam adheres to the Spaniards. B O O K XII. Y572.

ed that they should never be able to persuade the people of Amsterdam to unite with the other cities in the province, while their army was under the command of a person who had rendered himself so exceedingly obnoxious.

Outrages committed by their troops.

Loup complaints of the outrages of the foldiers were heard in every quarter, and many of the people began to lament the revolution to which they had given their confent. The States dreaded the consequences of so much ill humour. But they were not possessed of power fufficient to remedy the abuses complained of; and la Marc, who was naturally violent and ferocious, paid no regard to their commands. In this diffress they had no refource, but in the prudence and authority of the prince of Orange; who, they hoped, would, notwithstanding his late misfortunes, be able to repress the insolence of the soldiers and their general. They fent him notice of the critical fituation to which they were reduced; and they intreated him to come, as foon as possible, to take the government of the province, and the command of the forces, into his own hand.

Arrival of the prince of Orange in Holland. WILLIAM could not, either with fafety or honour, have left his army fooner than he did.

Meursii Auriacus, p. 95.

From

From Orfoy, where it was disbanded, he went, arrended only by his own domestics, and a company of horse, to Campen in Overyssel, and from thence he passed over the Zuider Sea to Enchuysen; where he was joyfully received, and all his directions for the greater security of the place, were carried immediately into execution. After staying there for some days, and visiting the other towns in the province, he set out for Haerlem; having appointed a convention of the States to be held in that city, to consider of the present situation of their affairs.

e he frequently convened them; and

\$ 0 0 E

His arrival excited in persons of all ranks the most unseigned joy; but this joy, he perceived, was greatly allayed by their apprehenfions of being unable to relift an enemy, before whom he himself, at the head of a powerful army, had been obliged to retire, object of his attention was to raise their drooping spirits, by making them sensible of the advantages which they possessed in the nature and fituation of their country; which, while they retained their superiority at sea, and acted in concert, would render abortive all the attempts of the Spaniards to reduce them. The magnanimity which he displayed diffused itself into every breast; and the deputies unanimously declared, that they would be entirely governed

His magnanimity. B 9.0 K by his counsels in all their conduct, and would lay down their lives fooner than abandon that invaluable liberty, without which they thought life itself was not defirable. In an almost men

His moderation, and fa-Jutary regulations.

In the present temper of their minds, William might have ruled the people of the maritime provinces with an absolute sway; but he knew there was a much fafer, as well as a more effectual, method of exercifing power, and wifely resolved to consult the States in every matter of importance, and to take upon himfelf only the execution of their commands. For this purpose he frequently convened them; and in order to give greater weight to their decifions, he perfuaded them to admit into their number the deputies of twelve other cities, befides those of whom their affembly had been hitherto composed: a measure which was no less gracious and popular, than it was wife and prudent. It flattered the vanity of those towns on which the new privilege was bestowed; engaged them to contribute with greater alacrity their share of the public expences; and drew the feveral districts of the province into a state of more intimate union with one another,

WITH the States, thus increased in number, the prince applied himself to rectify the diforders which had prevailed, and to put the proyince

BOOK XII.

vince into a posture of defence against the Spaniards. It had been deferted during the late commotions by many of the principal inhabitants, by feveral members of the courts of juftice, and by the officers of the revenue, and others who held public employments; which they had been induced to abandon, either by their attachment to popery, or the diffidence in the duration and stability of the present government. The numerous vacancies which were thus occasioned, were supplied with protestants; and no catholic was admitted into any office, or allowed to take any concern in the administration of public affairs.

designitive elations and friends, believes many per

THE exercise of the Romish religion was pro- Establishhibited in the churches; and the only worship reformed repermitted to be exercised publicly, was the protestant, as taught by Calvin, and practifed in Geneva, and the Palatinate. Thus far the prince of Orange complied with the inclination of the people, by a great majority of whom the principles of the reformers had been embraced. But all perfecution on account of religion, he discouraged to the utmost of his power. His reasonings for toleration were more successful now in favour of the papifts, than they had been formerly with the dutchess of Parma, in behalf of the reformers. The States, by his perfuasion, resolved that no person whatever. E 4 should

1573.

fhould be molested on account of his religion, provided that he lived quietly, kept no correspondence with the Spaniards, and gave no disturbance to the established mode of worship.

WILLIAM found greater difficulty in reftraining the licentiousness of the army, than in settling either the courts of justice or the church, When we reflect on those horrid scenes which were exhibited in the Netherlands by the duke of Alva and his affociates, it will not appear furprifing, that the protestants should have conceived the most violent animosity against their bloody perfecutors. They had feen their dearest relations and friends, besides many perfons whom they revered on account of the innocence and fanctity of their lives, treated like the most flagitious malefactors: and many of themfelves had, in order to avoid the fame fate, been obliged to abandon their habitations, and to wander from place to place, forlorn and indigent. In the bitterness of their distress, they had forgotten the spirit of that religion for which they fuffered; and on many occasions, wrecked their vengeance against their enemies with a brutal fury. To the Spaniards who were taken prisoners at sea, the protestants on board the fleet gave no quarter; while the

Grotius, p. 41.

ecclefiaftics, and many others whose only crime was their adherence to the religion of their anceftors, were treated by the protestant foldiers with equal inhumanity: a da lo wheel handle

sude, beafted of his authority in the fleet and

BOOK

THE count of la Marc, commander in chief Lumey de of the forces, was fo far from oppoling thefe enormities, that he encouraged his foldiers in committing them. This nobleman's principal virtue was intrepidity, and under the cloak of zeal for liberty, and the reformed religion, he feems to have intended nothing fo much as the gratification of his avarice or revenge. The prince of Orange who, from his natural humanity, and a prudent regard to future confequences, was utterly averse to every species of violence, attempted to make him fensible of the folly and iniquity of his conduct. But finding that he was not likely to fucceed, and that the foldiers still indulged themselves without controul in their wonted excesses, he referred the matter to the cognizance of the States, and defired them to confider coolly what was proper to be done. The States, who were highly incenfed against the count, for his contempt of their authority, deprived him of his command, and ordered him to be apprehended. William, unwilling to forget the fervices which the count had performed in the beginning of the revolt, foon after interposed in

BOOK XII.

his behalf, and prevailed upon the States to release him. But la Marc could not digest the affront which had been offered him. He complained loudly of the States for their ingratitude; boafted of his authority in the fleet and army, and attempted to excite a spirit of fedition among the people. The States were meditating to seize him a second time, in order to bring him to his trial. But the prince of Orange, prompted by tenderness for his relations, and a fense of his former services, diffunded them from executing their delign, and advised them to fuffer him to leave the province. The States liftened, though with fome reluctance, to this advice, and the count having left the Netherlands, died foon afterwards in the city of Liege and or borgansta , sonsloiv the fully and iniquity of his conduct. But

The command of the forces was conferred on the count of Battenburg, by whom they were brought under proper discipline; and all such of the catholics as chose to remain in the country, delivered from those alarms and apprehensions with which they had been hitherto disquieted. One cause of the great irregularities which had been committed by the troops, was the want of proper funds for their substitute. The States now supplied this defect, as well as the present circumstances of the province would allow. To the payment of the army,

army, and other public purposes, they appropriated the demefnes which the king had enjoved as count of Holland, the revenues of the Romish priests and monasteries, and the estates of all fuch catholics as had gone over to the enemy, besides a certain proportion of the cap-

WHILE the prince of Orange and the States Progress of were thus employed in providing for the fecurity of Holland, Frederic de Toledo had made rapid progress in reducing the towns which had revolted in the other provinces; nor did he find much difficulty in fubduing them; for fo great was the terror which they had conceived from his late fucgels, that of all the towns which had declared for the prince of Orange in Groningen, Overyssel, Utrecht, and Friesland, there was none that did not fend ambassadors to Toledo, to deprecate his vengeance, and to make profession of unreserved submission to his will. He placed garrisons in the most considerable towns, and inflicted no other punishment upon the people but pecuniary fines, Had he maintained the fame moderation in his conduct afterwards, he would not perhaps have encountered much greater difficulty in the recovery of feme of the towns of Holland and Zealand,

Grotius, p. 40. Meurfii Apriacus, p. 97.

than

3 0 0 K

than he had met with in recovering those of the interior provinces; but from natural temper, he rejoiced infinitely more in rigour and severity, than in lenity and moderation; of the truth of which he gave a signal proof in his barbarous treatment of the inhabitants of Naerden.

Meffacre of the people of Naerden.

THIS town was then neither large nor ftrongly fortified, yet the citizens, prompted by fome foreign protestants who refided in it, were bold enough to refuse admittance to a company of horfe, fent by Toledo before his main army, to require their submission; but, having quickly repented of their rashness, they dispatched a deputation of the most respectable inhabitants, among whom was Lambertus Hortenfins, a man eminent for his learning, to Amersfort, where Toledo had arrived in his way to Naerden. He declined hearing the ambassadors himself, and defired them to apply to Julio Romero, who had power, he faid, to grant them fuch terms of reconcilement as be should judge to be reasonable. By Romero it was agreed, that the lives and fortunes of the citizens should be spared on the following conditions: That the town should be immediately delivered into the hands of Toledo: that all the inhabitants should renew their oath of allegiance to the king; and that one hundred Spanish soldiers

300 K

diers should be permitted to feize as much booty as they could carry at one time out of the city. In ratification of this agreement, Romero, having given his night hand three feveral times to Hortenfius, entered the town, attended by fo finall a number of Spaniards as banished from the minds of the citizens all anprehenfions of fraud or violence; and when he fummoned them to meet in one of the churches to take the oath of allegiance, they ran thirher unarmed, and presented themselves a defenceless prey to their bloody murderers. Whether Romero acted in concert with Toledo does not appear from the cotemporary historians. This only is certain, that while the former was employed in administering the oath, the latter, who had brought forward his troops to the gates of the town, led them directly to the church in which the citizens were affembled, and ordering the doors which till then had been kept frut to be thrown open, he rushed into it at the head of his troops, and immediately killed with his own hand the principal magistrate. Spaniards were not backward to imitate the example of their general. They fell with favage fury on the aftonished, defenceless citizens, and after butchering all that were in the church, fpread themselves over the city and put every person whom they met to the word. They made no distinction between the inno2572.

cent and the guilty; the catholics, as well as protestants; those who had preserved their allegiance, as well as those who had thrown it off. were all involved in one promifcuous ruin. The foldiers then entering into the houses, where they found the wives and daughters of the flain overwhelmed with anguish, instead of being foftened by the fight of fo much unmerited diffress in that tender sex, their savage hearts only prompted them to indulge their avarice, their cruelty, and their luft. Even virgins under age shey violated, and others they tortured in the most inhuman manner, either from a wanton pleasure which they took in cruel deeds, or to extort from the unhappy fufferers a discovery of the treasure which had belonged to their murdered husbands or parents. They strangled some, embrued their hands in the blood of others, turned all the rest of the city into the open fields, and then throwing fire into the houses, reduced the town Anadior bis cooces, and boys rainted

The accounts transmitted to us by the protestant writers of the horrid cruelty which the Spaniards exercised on this occasion, would be incredible, if they were not confirmed by the catholic historians. There was an hospital in the town for old men, and at that time there were several in it above eighty years of age;

tries

even

# PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

8 0 0 K XII. 1374.

to ngaft

even these were butchered; nor did persons confined to the bed of fickness and diffress escape their fury. The life of Lambertus Hortensius was faved by the interposition of the count de Boffut; but the Spaniards made him fuffer what was worse than death; by murdering the fon, and tearing his heart out of his body before the father's eyes. There is another instance of their cruelty recorded, which is, if possible, still more inhuman. After having tortured in the most shocking manner one of the citizens, to make him discover where he had concealed his wealth, they dishonoured his wife in his presence, and upon his reproaching them with their barbarity, they put him to death; then, having tied the woman's hands behind her, they bound her by the feet to a beam of the house, with her head downward, and left her to die in that posture, with her little fon, whom they likewife bound and placed beside her, to aggravate the misery of that dreadful death to which their cruelty had doomed her monoot on any

FROM this horrid massacre, Toledo led his army to Amsterdam, where he remained for some time in expectation that, from the dread of his vengeance, the other towns of the pro-

than Raperda, a Pricilend gentleman, to chant

Tinco

Meursii Auriacus, p. 98. Thuani, lib. liv. Bentivoglio, p. 175.

tions

BOOK XII.

1572-

vince would be induced to make a tender of their submission; but the cruelty and treachery which he had exercised at Naerden, were not more contrary to the laws of religion and humanity, than inconsistent with the maxims of sound policy, and were calculated not so much to excite terror as revenge and indignation. From the sate of Naerden, the people were convinced, that there was at least as much to be dreaded from submission as from resistance, and they thought it no less absurd than dangerous, to enter into terms of agreement with men who had shewn themselves so cruelly persidious.

Siege of Haerlem.

Or this they foon gave a conspicuous proof in their vigorous and obstinate defence of Haerlem. To gain over the inhabitants of that city, Toledo had employed the mediation of the catholics of Amsterdam, and some of the magistrates of Haerlem had sent privately three of their number to Frederic to treat with him of a furrender. This was no fooner known than Riperda, a Friesland gentleman, to whom the prince of Orange had committed the government of the town, called together the principal inhabitants, and informed them of what had passed. " By a solemn oath," said he, " the magistrates were lately bound not to liften, without your permission, to any propofals.

Riperda's

SERIE

B O O K XII.

pofals, or to engage in any defign or enterprife, by which the general interest of the city might be affected; yet, not only without your permission, but even without your knowledge, they have fent an embaffy to treat with Toledo about delivering the city to the Spaniards. We are unable, they pretend, to withstand so great a force as will be brought against us, and must be involved in all the miseries of a cruel siege, unless we avert them by a timely application for peace and pardon. But have the Spaniards treated with greater lenity those who have trusted to their faith, than those who have opposed them? Have the people of Mechlin and Zutphen been dealt with more mercifully than those of Mons? Does not the melancholy fate of Naerden sufficiently instruct you how little regard is due to the promifes of those men, who have now shewn themselves no less devoid of faith than we have ever found them of humanity? Are not the streets of that unhappy city still reeking with the blood of those who confided in the faith and mercy of the Spaniards? By standing on our defence we may elude their fury; but if we receive them into the city, we rush headlong upon destruction. They will either butcher us like sheep, after they have stripped us of our arms, or reduce us to a state of ignominious flavery and bondage. Do not flatter yourselves with the hopes that they are VOL. II. willing

的例

ď

ed ni he

m rd

6-60

of hat of the aree

own om go-

faid ot to

pro-

3 0 0 R XII. willing to be reconciled to you. They intend only to take advantage of your fimplicity, and to get you into their power, without exposing themselves to danger. Have you not already fworn to act the part to which I now exhort you, to defend your walls against the Spaniards, and to preserve your allegiance to the prince of Orange, whom you have acknowledged as the only lawful governor of the province? And in order to fave ourselves from the hardships of a fiege, shall we imitate that vile example of treachery, which in our enemies appears fo odious? Let us derive courage, my friends, from the justness of our cause: and rather than fubmit to fuch an enemy, let us refolve to die, fighting gloriously in defence of our religion, our liberty, and laws."

This speech was received with shouts of high applause by all the audience. They cried out with one voice; "No peace with the Spaniards; we will shed the last drop of our blood, rather than open our gates to so perfidious an enemy." Riperda then sent information to the prince of Orange, who was at this time in Delst, of the resolution which they had formed. And in return, William encouraged the citizens to persevere, by affuring them that the other cities in the province would exert themselves with vigour in their behalf. Immediate-

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

1572.

ly after which he reinforced the garrison with four companies of Germans; and fent St. Aldegond with a commission to put the administration of the town in the hands of such as were fincerely attached to the reformed religion. Of the three ambaffadors who had treated with the Spaniards, one remained with Toledo, and the other two were, upon their return to Haerlem, put under arrest, and sent to Delft, where, after being tried, they were condemned as traitors. One of them died in prison, and the other was executed publicly: an instance of severity, with which the prince of Orange was not displeased, as it tended to deter the catholics in the other cities, from holding correspondence with the enemy.

ò

5, n

e,

n,

gh

ut

ni-

od,

an

the

in

ed. iti-

the

m-

ate-

ly

THE news of these unexpected events excited, in the fiery tempers of Toledo, and his father, the highest degree of wrath and indignation. They immediately gave orders for the march of the troops to Haerlem, and exerted themselves strenuously in making preparations for carrying on the fiege with dispatch and vigour.

HAERLEM was, at the time of this memo- Description rable fiege, the most considerable town in Holland, next to Amsterdam. It was surrounded with a deep ditch and a ftrong wall, but was of

F 2

BOOK 1572.

fo great extent, that it required a numerous garrison to defend it. It stands beautifully in the midst of an extensive plain, having a wood on one fide, and a branch of the river Sparen on the other; and the other branch of that river passes through the town, and then falls into the lake, or as it is fometimes called, the fea of Haerlem. Amfterdam and Leyden are nearly at the distance of between three and four leagues from it; the former lying towards the east, and the latter towards the fouth. From Amfterdam and Utrecht, Toledo proposed to furnish his army with provisions; and the people of Haerlem expected to derive the fame advantage from the neighbourhood of Leyden; where, in order to affift them more effectually, the prince of Orange now fixed his refidence.

THE nearest way by which the Spanish army could approach to Haerlem, was by the fort of Sparendam, the rampart of which stood on the dike along which the troops must pass. this fort Riperda had placed a garrison of three hundred men, and had begun to employ the country people in breaking down the dike, in order to lay the country under water. But the frost having set in with uncommon severity, rendered all their labour fruitless, and gave the Spaniards easy access to the fort. The garrifon made a vigorous relistance for some time;

but

but being attacked on every fide, and over- BOOK powered by fuperior numbers, they were at length compelled to retire to Haerlem.

Toledo followed foon after with his army, which confifted of between twelve and thirteen fiege. thousand men; six thousand of whom were natives of Spain, and the rest Walloons and Germans. He had just begun to assign them their feveral stations, when he received intelligence that a body of troops, amounting to near three thousand men, with cannon and provisions, were upon their march from Leyden, with an intention to enter Haerlem, before the blockade was formed. He fet out immediately to intercept them, and had the good fortune, during a fall of fnow, to come upon them unawares, near the village of Berkenrode. His troops being greatly fuperior in number to the enemy, broke their ranks at the first onset, and having killed between fix and feven hundred, put the rest to flight. Their officers endeavoured to rally them, but in vain. They fled precipitately, and left their cannon and provisions a prey to the victorious army.

FLUSHED with this fuccess, Toledo returned Progress of immediately to the fiege. Having stationed the Walloons and Germans on the great road which leads to Leyden, he himself with the Spaniards

BOOK XII.

¥572.

Spaniards took possession of an hospital, which lay near the gate of the cross. At this place he refolved to begin his operations, although the gate was covered by a strong ravelin, and the wall on that fide could be more eafily defended than in any other quarter, Into this blunder he was betrayed, not fo much by ignorance or inadvertence, as by the contempt which he entertained for the belieged. After the fuccess with which his arms had every where been attended, he did not expect to meet with the fmallest difficulty in his present enterprise; and flattered himself that Haerlem, like the other revolted cities, would, as foon as he should begin his attack, open her gates to receive him. From the fame prefumption, he neglected all the precautions which are ufually taken in fieges; and, without opening trenches to cover his men from the enemy's fire, he planted his battery and began to cannonade the gate and ravelin. He had no fooner made a breach, than he refolved to storm it, and for this purpose ordered one hundred and fifty men to crofs the ditch, by means of a portable bridge. This detachment was ordered to return, in case the breach should be found impracticable. But the rest of the foldiers, who were not less confident of success than their general, and were impelled by their avidity for plunder, without waiting for the word

word of command, ran forward to the bridge, and paffed over it in great numbers. They foon perceived their error. The breach was not near fo considerable as they had imagined, and their fcaling-ladders were too short. The narrowness of the bridge, which permitted only three men to march a-breaft, threw them into confusion. They stood on the brink of the ditch, crowded together, and exposed to the musquetry as well as cannon of the besieged. Still, however, the foolish ardor with which they were inspired, made them unwilling to retire, till Romero, an officer whom they highly respected, advanced towards them, and reproached them with the madness of their attempt. " Do you not perceive, he cried, that the smallness of the breach renders your affault impracticable? Is this the discipline which you have learnt in the school of the duke of Alva? Thus, without orders, to expose yourselves a defenceless prey to these rebels, who infult and butcher you, while they themfelves are out of the reach of danger? You will foon find an opportunity to take vengeance on them. At present it is not in your power." At length he perfuaded them to retire, but not till he himfelf was wounded, and near two hundred private men, and a great number of officers, had fallen.

F 4

THIS

BOOK XII,

This difaster served to undeceive Toledo with regard to the facility of his enterprise; and he resolved not to expose his troops to any further danger, till he should be fully provided with every thing necessary for conducting the siege, with less expence of blood, and a better prospect of success. For this end, he gave the proper instructions to his agents in Utrecht and Amsterdam; but all the roads which led to his camp, were so much insested by the Hollanders, that a whole month elapsed before he was in a condition to renew his operations against the town,

Supplies fent to the town over the ice;

THE prince of Orange was more fuccessful in his attempts to fecure it. He could not indeed collect a fufficient number of troops, either to raise the siege, or to force his way through the enemy's intrenchments. But the frost having continued for feveral weeks, not only men, but even loaded carriages, could be conveyed over the lake with greater facility than by land. The reader need not be told with what agility the Hollanders transport themselves from one place to another, over the ice, with scates, They exerted all their dexterity on this occafion, and introduced into the city fifteen companies of foldiers, together with a great number of fledges, loaded with provisions and ammunition.

IN

BOOK XII.

15724

In the mean time Toledo had prepared every thing requisite for resuming the operations of the fiege; and he now haftened to repair the faults which he had committed in the beginning; proceeding with greater caution than before, but with the same activity and vigor. Having by trenches fecured his troops against the fire of the besiegers, he began to batter the town with his artillery; and at the same time employed his miners, of whom the duke of Alva had fent him three thousand from the bishopric of Liege, in working mines, and sapping the foundation of the walls. Neither labour nor danger was avoided. But the boldness and vigilance of the citizens and garrison were in proportion to the means employed to fubdue them, By countermines, they either prevented, or rendered ineffectual, the mines of the besiegers; and no sooner was a breach made in the fortifications, than ditches were dug, or some sudden bulwark raised behind it, by which all access was rendered as difficult as ever. Not fatisfied with acting on the defenfive, they often fallied out upon the beliegers, destroyed their works, and fell upon them sword in hand, when they were the least prepared to repel their attacks,

While the Spaniards were thus kept in perpetual occupation and anxiety, the prince of Orange 3572

Orange laboured affiduously to increase their difficulties, by sending out slying parties to intercept their convoys of provisions. Some of these attempts proved successful; and as they made it necessary for Toledo to send large detachments from his army to guard his convoys, they facilitated the introduction of supplies into Haerlem, and retarded the progress of the siege.

Uselese cruelty exercised by both parties.

Almost all the supplies of the Spanish army came from Amsterdam, and there was but one road by which they could be conveyed. In order to take possession of an important pass on that road, the prince had fent a detachment of troops under Antony le Peintre, who had a principal concern in the furprise of Mons. The catholics of Amsterdam having received information of this defign, dispatched a number of forces, fufficient not only to fecure the pass, but to engage with the enemy. The two parties came to blows; the protestants were routed, and many of them flain; among whom was le Peintre their commander. In derision of the belieged, the Spaniards having cut off the heads of le Peintre, and of another officer killed in that rencounter, whose name was Coning or King, they threw them over the walls into the city, with an inscription tied to the head of Coning, which bore, besides his name,

upon

upon which they jested aukwardly, that he was BOOE come with two thousand auxiliaries to raise the fiege. Of this infult the Haerlemese shewed their refentment, by an action equally barbarous. They beheaded twelve of their Spanish prisoners; and then put all their heads into a cask, which they rolled down into the trenches, after writing upon it, " The tax of the tenth penny to the duke of Alva, with the interest due to him on account of the delay of payment," In revenge for this barbarity, the Spaniards hung up by the feet and neck, a number of prifoners, in fight of the belieged; who, in return, put to death some more of their prifoners, in the fame ignominious manner, in the view of the Spaniards. Such instances of barbarous and useless cruelty were often practifed in the beginning of the present war; nor were they discontinued, till the duke of Alva and his fon, who by their example contributed much to the spreading of this favage spirit, had left the Netherlands.

THE operations of the fiege were in the mean Toledo aftime carried on by Toledo with as much cele-town. rity, as the difficulty under which he laboured in furnishing himfelf with provisions, and the numberless diseases which the severity of the feafon occasioned among his troops, would allow. By undermining the ravelin which defended

BOOK XII,

2572.

fended the gate of the cross, he obliged the garrison to abandon it; and after a cannonading, which had lasted for many days, by which he laid a great part of the wall in ruins, he at last resolved to storm the breach with all his forces. For this purpose he drew them together from their feveral stations in the night; and that he might find the belieged unprepared, he began affault before day-break. No precaution was neglected to infure fuccefs. The orders were explained to all the foldiers, particularly and diffinctly. Each man had his station and part assigned him. Some were appointed to stand at a proper distance from the walls, to annoy the enemy in case they should appear; and those who were destined for the affault were enjoined to observe the most profound filence, till they should make themselves mafters of the breach. So well was this last injunction observed, that several of the Spaniards had mounted the breach, and even scaled the walls, before the befieged were apprifed of their approach. But when they had advanced thus far, they were perceived by the guards, who immediately founded the alarm, and tumbled them all headlong, before they had time to put themselves into a posture of defence.

This affault was made near the ravelin of which the Spaniards had got possession some

3

days

days before; and in order to fecond the affail- BOOK ants, many Spanish officers and foldiers were standing upon the ravelin, and a great number round it. The townsmen having resolved to render this fortification useless to the enemy, had wrought a mine under it, and lodged there a quantity of gunpowder, and other combustible materials. They saw with joy, and feized instantly, the opportunity presented to them, of executing their purpose with fignal damage to the enemy. A part of the ravelin, with the ground adjoining to it, was blown up; and many of the Spaniards perished. The rest of the army flood aghast at this unforeseen difaster. The citizens left them no leifure to recover from their aftonishment, but rushed out impetuously, attacked them with irrelistible fury, and compelled them to retire with the loss of a great number of officers, and upwards of three hundred private men.

THE failure of this attempt, in which Toledo He medihad exerted his utmost force and skill, gave raising of him great anxiety with regard to the iffue of the fiege, the fiege; and fome of the principal officers advised him to raise it without delay. " All the miferies of a fiege," they faid, " were felt more by the royal army, than by the rebels who were belieged. Through the difficult communication between the camp and Amsterdam,

B O R O MII. dam, the troops laboured under a perpetual fearcity of provisions; and suffered more from the severity of the season, than from the sword of the enemy. They would either never be able to take the place, or it would cost them infinitely more than it was worth. In the end, the conquerors would find themselves in as deplorable a condition as the conquered; and no army would remain, sufficient to subdue the other cities which had rebelled."

This opinion was warmly opposed by other officers, who represented, That their success in the further profecution of the war, would depend on the iffue of the present siege. we raise it," said they, " we shall confirm all the other cities in their obstinacy; if we perfevere, we shall render easier every future enterprife. The feafon cannot remain long in its present severity. One night may dissolve the ice, of which our enemies have so often availed themselves. Our loss of men will be speedily repaired by the levies which are making in the Netherlands, and by the troops which we expect from Spain. We shall soon be able to cut off the town from all communication with the other revolted cities; and when we have done this, can we doubt that the besieged will open their gates and throw themselves upon our mercy?"

BETWEEN

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

Between these opposite opinions Toledo BOOK would not take upon himself to decide, but referred the matter to the duke, whose answer, carrying in it the appearance of authority more to his foa. than of counsel, shewed that he was not a little diffatisfied with his fon for deliberating on the subject. "You must prosecute the fiege," faid Alva, in the letter which he wrote to him, " till you bring it to the defired issue; unless you would prove yourself unworthy of the name you bear, of the blood from which you are fprung, and of the command with which I have intrusted you. The more difficult this enterprise, the greater glory may you derive from it. In a fiege of fuch importance as the prefent, you ought not to consider the number of days which it detains you, but the confequences with which your fuccess or failure will be attended. You must now endeavour to effectuate by famine, what you have been unable to accomplish by the fword. You must blockade the town, instead of storming it; and you will be enabled to render the blockade complete, by the reinforcement which will foon be fent you. But if still you shall entertain thoughts of abandoning your enterprise, I will either come myself to the camp, fick as I am; or if my increasing illness shall prevent me, I will fend for the duchess

of

BOOK of Alva to command the army, rather than fuffer it to withdraw."

FREDERIC was stung with this reproach, and resolved to prosecute the siege, regardless of all the difficulties and dangers which had induced him to deliberate. He proceeded slowly, however, on account of his want of a sufficient number of troops to form the blockade; when, about the middle of February, the frost went off, and changed entirely the operations of the contending parties.

Battle on

THE prince of Orange had not neglected to provide for this event. A great number of vessels had been prepared, and as foon as the ice was melted, and the wind favourable, they left Leyden with a large supply of provisions; and failing along the lake, entered into the Sparen, and got fafe to Haerlem. In this way the belieged were frequently fupplied; nor could the Spaniards for some time procure a naval force sufficient to prevent it. At last the count de Bossut, assisted by the people of Amfterdam, collected a great number of armed vessels with which he made his appearance on the lake. And thus the scene was almost entirely changed, and the operations of the fiege converted, for feveral weeks, into the various

rencounters

B O O K XII.

rencounters which passed between the sleets; while the one party laboured to introduce fupplies into the city, and the other was continually on the watch to intercept them. At first the actions were flight and unimportant, but at length the number of ships on both sides being greatly augmented, they came to a general engagement; in which, after much bloodshed, victory declared against the protestants. In this action the count de Bossut acquired great honour, and reduced the enemy's fleet to fo low a pitch, that henceforth they could not venture with fafety to come within his reach. He foon after made himself master of a fort in the mouth of the Sparen, and having stationed a part of the fleet there, he rendered all access to the town by water utterly impracticable.

During these transactions on the lake, the townsmen and garrison exerted the same activity and vigour as before. They gave the besiegers no respite, but harassed them continually, by fallying out in strong bodies, sometimes in one quarter, and sometimes in another. In one of these sallies, they drove the German forces from their intrenchments, slew upwards of eight hundred of them, set on fire their tents and baggage, and carrying off a Vol. II.

The vigor and intrepidity of the besieged. B O O K XII. great number of cannon and military enfigns, returned to the town in triumph.

But Toledo was foon afterwards in a condition to prevent these eruptions, from which the besieged derived so much glory. The reinforcement which his father had been preparing, at length arrived; and his trenches were thereby secured against any attack that could be made upon them, either from within, or from without.

Their dif-

The besieged began to suffer greatly from a scarcity of provisions. There was no expedient for relief, however desperate, which they did not employ. They attempted frequently in the night, to force the enemy's lines, and to open a passage for the convoys, which, agreeably to concert, the prince of Orange sent forward, to be ready to enter the town, in case the garrison could dislodge the besiegers from their entrenchments. But they found the enemy every where prepared to receive them, and were repulsed in all their attempts. They had then recourse to another no less desperate expedient. They broke down the dike of the Sparen, and laid all the ground between the lake

m Thuanus, tom. iii. p. 218.

and the city under water. The Spaniards be- BOOK ing obliged, in confequence of this device, to quit the part of their entrenchments to which the water reached, fome flat-bottomed boats paffed into the town, with gun-powder and provisions. But the relief which the belieged received in this way was inconsiderable. Bossut being absolute master of the lake, the passage by which the Hollanders had entered was foon blocked up, and all access to the town rendered as difficult as ever.

THE people of Haerlem had now no prospect Count Batof deliverance, but from a body of troops defeated, which the prince of Orange had for forme months been employed in affembling, with a view to attempt the raifing of the siege. He had folicited aid from the queen of England, and from the French and German protestants. But the former was averse at this time to declaring herfelf openly against Philip; and both the latter were too much occupied at home, to have either leifure or power to afford their brethren in Holland any effectual assistance. In the mean time, the famine in Haerlem had rifen to the most dreadful height. Every species of ordinary food was already confumed; and the people subfifted on the roots of the coarfest herbs, and on the siesh of horses, dogs, and other animals, against which men com-G 2 monly

B O O K XII.

monly entertain the most irreconcileable averfion. William having got information of the extremity to which they were reduced, refolved to make an effort in their behalf, with the forces which he had already collected. confifted partly of French, German, and English protestants, but chiefly of raw troops, which had been levied hastily for the present purpose in the neighbouring cities; amounting to four thousand foot, and six hundred horse. He intended to have conducted this little army himself, but was prevailed on by the States to give the command of it to the count of Battenburg. Notice was conveyed to the belieged of the time, when this armament would approach Haerlem, by letters tied to pigeons, which had been brought from Haerlem to Leyden, in order to be employed as messengers to the befieged, in case all other communication between the cities should be obstructed ".

BATTENBURG fet out from Leyden with his troops, several sield-pieces, and a large convoy of provisions, in the beginning of July. His instructions were, to direct his attack against the quarters of the Germans stationed towards the plain of Haerlem. The besieged, it was expected, would fally out upon them at

Thuanus, lib. lv. c. v.

the fame time, and while they were thus dif- BOOK tracted by one enemy before, and another behind them, it was hoped that the convoy of provisions would find an opportunity of entering the town. But Toledo having received intelligence of their defign, drew up a part of his forces within their entrenchments, to reprefs the fally intended by the befieged, and led out the rest to meet count Battenburg. His troops being greatly superior to the enemy both in difcipline and number, broke their ranks, and threw them into confusion at the first onset. The general, and upwards of two thousand men, were killed; and almost the whole convoy of provisions fell into the hands of the victors.

This difafter entirely broke the spirits of the The befiege besieged, and made it necessary for them to pro- capitulate. pose a furrender without delay. They accordingly fent a deputation to Toledo, with an offer to deliver up the town, on condition that the inhabitants should not be pillaged, and that the garrison should be allowed to march out of it, with the honours of war. Toledo His answer. refused to listen to these, or any other conditions; and informed them that they must leave it to him to determine, what treatment both the garrison and citizens should receive.

BOOK XII.

1573. Their refo-

THE belieged were too well acquainted with his implacable spirit, not to shrink at the thoughts of expoling themselves to his mercy. They had not forgotten the difmal catastrophe They confidered his answer as a of Naerden. declaration, that he had devoted them to de-The people ran in crowds from every quarter of the city, to the places of public refort, in order to learn the particulars of that fatal answer which the deputies had brought. The women, the aged, and all the more unwarlike part of the inhabitants, were overwhelmed with terror. As if their houses had been already in flames, or as if they had beheld the bloody fword of the Spaniard waving round them, there was nothing to be feen or heard, but tears, and shrieks, and groans. Their despair was soon afterwards converted into a degree of madness, by a resolution formed by the governor and garrison, to leave all such as were unable to bear arms behind them, and to force their way, fword in hand, through the enemy's lines. To prevent them from executing their purpose, the women hastened tumultuously (many of them with their children in their arms) to the gate where the garrison had appointed to rendezvous before their departure. It was a fcene truly piteous and miferable; the women either rolling in the duft, or clinging round the necks and knees of their husbands, fathers.

fathers, fons, or brothers; diffolved in tears, BOOK and imploring that they might be carried along with them, and fuffered either to escape or perish together. The men were melted at the fight of fo much anguish in persons so near and dear to them, and yielded at last to their entreaties. It was then agreed, that one half of all the military in the town should march in the front, the other half in the rear, and the women, children, and others unable to bear arms, in the middle between them. Drawn up in this form, they refolved to attempt a paffage with their fwords through the enemy's entrenchments. They knew it to be impossible but that most of them must perish. " But if we open our gates to the Spaniards," faid Riperda, " must we not likewise perish? And if we must die (though still it is possible we may escape), is it not better to die fighting bravely in the field; we who have exerted ourselves so strenuously in defence of our religion and liberty; than, after being stript of our arms, and bound like criminals, to receive an ignominious death upon a fcaffold, or in a dungeon, from the hands of an ungenerous and unrelenting enemy?"

THEY were upon the point of putting their Toledo ofdefign in execution, when intelligence of it favourable was carried to Toledo. He confidered, that terms.

BOOK if they were not diverted from it, he should, in consequence of his victory, instead of a great and important city, acquire possession only of a desolated ruin. He reslected too on the danger to which his troops might be exposed, from the fury of so many brave men animated by despair and vengeance; and therefore, without delay, he fent a trumpet to the befieged, to give them hopes of favour and forgiveness. There was a violent struggle in their minds for some time between their fears. and the hopes with which he thus inspired them. But from their knowledge of his character, their diffrust and diffidence prevailed; and they refused to hearken to his proposal, till he engaged, that, on condition of their paying two hundred thousand livres, the army should be restrained from plundering the inhabitants, and that all of them, except fiftyfeven, whom he named, should receive a full pardon of their offences.

> This exception of fo great a number of citizens, who were the most considerable persons in the town, and had diftinguished themselves by their bravery in its defence, would have prevented the accommodation from taking place, had not the German part of the garrison urged in the most determined manner, that the conditions offered should be accepted. The Walloons.

Walloons, on the other hand, and the Dutch, were extremely reluctant and averse; because, as they were more obnoxious than the Germans, they believed that no mercy would be shewn them. The garrison being thus divided in their fentiments, and many of them having, with a view to make their escape, secretly withdrawn from their stations on the walls, the inhabitants began to dread that the Spaniards, observing them grown more remiss than formerly, might take the town by ftorm; and therefore, without further delay, they fent a deputation of their number, to make the fur- The furrenrender on the terms proposed.

1573.

A REGIMENT of Spaniards was immediately fent to take possession of the place. All per- July 13. fons, whether inhabitants or foreign foldiers, were ordered to lay down their arms. The citizens were commanded to retire into certain churches, and the garrison to certain monasteries, where guards were placed over them, to prevent their escape. On the same day, Toledo entered the town with the Spanish troops. In order to induce the foreign foldiers, of whom the garrison chiefly consisted, to concur with the inhabitants in the furrender, Toledo had given them particular affurances of fafety. And although they were strictly guarded, and not fuffered to depart, yet bread had been diftributed

B O O K XII.

buted to them as well as to the citizens; and no violence was offered them till the third day, when the duke of Alva, who had recovered from his illness, came to Haerlem, on pretence of visiting the fortifications, but in reality to instruct his son with regard to his treatment of the prisoners.

The perfidious cruelty of Alva and his fon,

Ir was then, but too late, that this brave, though now defenceless garrison, repented of having fo tamely delivered up their arms; and faw the folly of trufting in the mercy of an ungenerous enemy, whose revenge and harred were implacable. A maffacre, which had been concerted in the interview between the father and fon, was begun, by putting to death three hundred Walloons. At the fame time, the brave Riperda, and other persons of note were beheaded. But the flaughter ftopt not here. Several hundreds of French, Scotch, and English foldiers, besides a considerable number of the citizens who had been feized in attempting to make their escape, were likewise butchered; and when the executioners were tired with flaughtering, they tied the unhappy victims two by two, and plunged them into the river. Even the fick and wounded were carried out into the court-yard of the hospital where they lay, and put to the fword.

HISTORIANS

HISTORIANS differ as to the number of those BOOK who were involved in this difinal cataffrophe; and it is remarkable that some of the Spanish writers make it greater than the Dutch. By the lowest account, nine hundred brave men were executed like the vilest malefactors, who, trufting to Toledo's promife, had given up their arms, and thrown themselves upon his mercy. an benefit to a didistribute

1573€

IT would shock the reader's humanity to of- confefer any excuse for such inhuman cruelty; yet it quences of the vigorous must not be denied that Alva had ample mat- detence of Haerlem. ter of chagrin, when he considered how much the length of the fiege, and the obstinate valour of the belieged had cost him. By the inclemency of the feafon, by the fcarcity of provifions, and by the fword of the enemy, he had lost four thousand five hundred men; besides a great number whom their difeafes or wounds rendered unfit for fervice. Nor was the diminution of his forces the only loss which he fustained from this fiege. It was attended with an expence, by which his treasury was exhausted. It funk confiderably the reputation of his arms; and inspired the infurgents with hopes, that an enemy, who had found it so difficult to conquer, might themselves be overcome. It afforded leifure to the other revolted cities to fettle their affairs, and furnished them with the

3573.

BOOK the happiest opportunity of carrying on their conquests in Zealand, where the city of Middleburg still remained in the hands of the Spaniards ".

Mutiny of the Spanish troops.

Or the feveral inconveniencies which the duke of Alva suffered from the length of the fiege, the draining of his treasury was not the least considerable; as it occasioned his falling behind in the payment of his troops, and rendered abortive all the fucceeding operations of the campaign. He intended that they should have gone from Haerlem into North Holland, to secure the town of Alcmaer. But when orders were given for their march, they refused to obey. They had been greatly exasperated by the conditions granted to the people of Haerlem, because they were thereby disappointed in their hopes of plunder; and they refolved to make Toledo feel their refentment, by infifting on the immediate payment of their arrears. He represented to them the prejudice which the king's interest would suffer from their remaining inactive at the present crisis. But the more they perceived their importance, the higher was the gratification of their refentment. Without regard either to Toledo's remonstrances, or to the terms on which Haerlem had

n Bentivoglio, p. 117. Meteren, p. 110. Auriacus, lib. viii.

been furrendered, they fixed their quarters BOOK in that city; laid the citizens, already exhaufted by their fufferings, under contribution. and exercised over them the same tyrannical oppression, as if they had taken the town by ftorm: thus demonstrating to the inhabitants of the other cities, the abfurdity of submitting to the Spaniards, whatever conditions might be offered; fince, even when their commanders were willing to observe these conditions, they were violated by the foldiers, whose rapacity the general was unable to restrain.

cital games of the town. They but engelle This incident affected the duke of Alva with the most sensible concern. He was aware of the pernicious effects that must arise from it. He had ever valued himself, and not without reason, on the exact discipline which he had hitherto maintained. Inclined, but at the fame time afraid, to employ rigour and feverity, lest still more pernicious consequences should follow, he resolved to make trial of perfuafion; and with this view he employed the intercession of the marquis of Vitelli, who was the most beloved as well as the most refpected of all his officers. Vitelli exerted his utmost art and influence; and at last, with infinite difficulty, he perfuaded the mutineers to accept a part of their arrears, and sla s

94

manders . sand to fubinit to the authority of their com-

The fiege of

Much time having been employed in this negociation, the feafon was far advanced before the army could be led to Alcmaer. This place (if they had attacked it fooner) must unavoidably have fallen into their hands. It had been the last of all the cities in North Holland. in shaking off its allegiance to Philip. The catholic inhabitants were numerous, and had been able to keep possession of one of the principal gates of the town. They had earnestly folicited Toledo to haften to their affiftance. But the mutiny of his troops having prevented him from complying with their request till it was too late, the prince of Orange had improved the leifure which this incident afforded him; and having fent forces to the affiftance of the protestant inhabitants, he had wrested the gate out of the hands of the catholics; furnished the protestants with arms, and procured for them from the neighbouring cities, supplies of provisions and military stores.

Toledo was aware of the disadvantages which must attend his entering on the siege of

· Bentivoglio, p. 131.

a place,

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

1573

a place, fituated like Alcmaer, in a marfly \$ 0 0 K foil, fo late in the year. w But he hoped, that with fo great an army as he now poffeffed? he would be able to reduce it before the rainy feafon should begin; and he knew that the reduction of Alcmaer would greatly facilitate his conquest of the other towns in the province. He left Haerlem, therefore, as foon as Vitelli had quelled the mutiny of the troops, and marched directly towards Alcmaer . ed intelligence, that the Hollachers had to be

HAVING planted a battery on each fide of the town, he began a brisk cannonading, and in a few days made fuch confiderable breaches, that he doubted not of being able to carry the town by florm. In order to divide the garrifon, he refolved to make an affault on both fides at once. The inhabitants perceived his defign, and prepared for their defence. The Spaniards having passed the ditch, by means The Spaniof two portable bridges, advanced to the attack with loud shouts, and full of confidence that there was no force in the place sufficient to oppose them. But they soon found that courage, when grounded on despair, can in some cases supply the want both of discipline and The garrison, seconded by the numbers.

1

f

e

d

25

es

of

ce,

townsmen.

P It amounted to fixteen thousand men.

It lies at the distance of only one day's journey from Haerlem.

1573.

BOOK townsmen, made so intrepid a resistance, as filled the Spaniards with aftonishment. They renewed the attack feveral times; but were at last obliged to retire with the loss of fix hundred killed, and three hundred wounded. Toledo could not, either by promifes or threats, perfuade them to return to the affault. Soon afterwards the rains began to fall, and the Spaniards suffered greatly from the humidity of the air and foil. The duke of Alva too had received intelligence, that the Hollanders had formed the defign of opening their fluices, in order to lay the country round Alemaer under water. To fave his army, therefore, from destruction, he fent orders to his fon to raife the fiege; which Frederic did accordingly on the eleventh of October: He then marched to the fouthern parts of the province, and put his troops, greatly fatigued and exhausted, into winterquarters to the said so both a seed about the no the Hollanders with the

The fiege raifed.

Sea-fight near Amfterdam.

ALVA was not more fortunate at this time by sea, than he had been by land at Alcmaer. In revenge for the affiftance which the people of Amsterdam had lent the Spaniards in the fiege of Haerlem, the inhabitants of Enchuyfen, Horn, and other protestant cities, had fitted out against them a numerous fleet, which they Hollut on solved

flationed

Meteren, p. 123. Thuanus, lib, lv. fect. 8.

this fleet they took or destroyed every vessel that attempted to pass from Amsterdam into the Zwider fea, and thus put an entire stop to the trade of that commercial city. To remedy this evil, which must soon have proved fatal to a people who subsisted wholly by trade, the duke of Alva had come himself to Amsterdam, where he had equipped with the utmost expedition a fleet, consisting of twelve ships of war, of a much larger fize than usual, of which he gave the command to the count de Boffut.

This fleet was much inferior in number to that of the enemy; but this disadvantage, Alva hoped, would be compensated by the number of foldiers on board, added to the superior size of the ships, and the skill and bravery of the commander in to lord many a restricted ground.

Stationed in the mouth of the river Ye. With BOOK 1573-

As foon as Boffut approached the mouth of The protethe river, the Hollanders left their station, and ious. retired towards Horn and Enchuysen. Here they received a confiderable reinforcement; and foon afterwards returned, under the command of Theodore Sonoy, to watch an opportunity to encounter the enemy on advantageous terms. The two fleets for some time lay in fight of each other, and frequent skirmishes passed between them. Bossut hesitated long, whether he should venture to engage with a VOL. II.

H

force

BOOK XII. force fo.much superior; and for this reason he kept his fleet in the open sea, and in the deepest water, where he could avail himfelf of the fize of his fhips. But the people of Amsterdam, impatient under the interruption of their trade, having transmitted a false representation to the duke of Alva of the strength of the Dutch fleet, perfuaded him to fend positive orders for a general engagement. Boffut, though extremely diffident of fuccess, immediately steered towards the enemy, who lay in shallow water, prepared for his attack. The combat was begun with great spirit and intrepidity, but victory foon appeared on the fide of the Hollanders; who having a much greater number of ships than the enemy, attacked them on every fide, and being much nimbler in all their motions, did them a great deal of mischief, while their own loss was inconsiderable. Of Bossut's fleet, one ship, with all the crew, was funk; three were firanded, and afterwards taken by the Hollanders; and all the rest, except the admiral's galley, faved themselves by slight. Of this veffel, the cotemporary historians speak in the strongest terms; and represent her as one of the largest, and the best equipped, that had been ever feen. She was furrounded by a number of the enemy's smaller vessels, which battered her furiously on every side, and at length drove her upon a bank. Boffut, still unwilling

0 0 K

I573.

unwilling to fuffer her to fall into their hands, continued to make the most obstinate relistance, fill, of three hundred foldiers on board. two hundred and twenty were killed, and all the rest wounded but fifteen. In this situation. one of the Spaniards, who remembered the scenes of treachery and bloodshed in which he had been concerned in Naerden and Haerlem, advised the admiral to receive the enemy into the ship, and then to blow her in the air. But Boffut, conscious of having done every thing Boffut is taken prithat either his duty or his honour could require, foner. refused to listen to so desperate a proposal, and chose rather to confide in an offer which was made him by the Hollanders, that if he would furrender without any further relistance, they would spare the lives of all that were on board. On this condition the ship was accordingly given up; and Boffut, with fuch of the crew and foldiers as furvived, was conducted to prifon in the town of Horn'.

Sonoy fent immediate notice of this victory to the States of Holland; who being fenfible how much their fafety depended on maintain-

eld to be excurrence of the

This ongagement lasted for twenty-eight hours.

The admiral's thip called the Inquifition, carried only two and thirty guns, Thuanus, lib. lv. fect. vii. Metefen, p. 125. Bentivoglio, p. 133.

B O O K XII.

ing their superiority at sea, had been extremely anxious with regard to the issue of the contest; and they now appointed a solemn thanksgiving to be observed in all the churches of the province.

The States acquire San Gertrudenberg. THEIR joy on this occasion was not a little increased by the acquisition of San Gertrudenberg; which gave them the command of the Maese, and a free entrance into the province of Brabant. It was taken by a detachment of their troops, under the command of the Sieur de Payette, a French protestant, who entered it in the night by scalade, and put the garrison, consisting of a cohort of Walloons under a Spanish governor, to the sword.

St. Aldegond taken prisoner. This loss was in some measure compensated to the duke of Alva, by an advantage which a detachment of his army gained over the Sieur de St. Aldegond, who had marched with a body of troops to check the excursions of the Spaniards in the southern parts of Holland. St. Aldegond's forces were cut to pieces or dispersed, and he himself was taken prisoner. Alva would not have spared the life of a man, who, by his activity, in rousing the spirit of liberty among his countrymen, had rendered himself so exceedingly obnoxious, had he not been restrained by his regard for the preservation of the

count de Boffut; upon whom the prince of BOOK Orange had declared he would retaliate, for whatever feverity should be used against St. Aldegond .

fiege, no less memorable than that of Haerlem, was referved for his fuccessor. Alva had,

1573

ALVA intended to have begun the next cam- Alva leaves paign with the fiege of Leyden; and with this lands. view he feized upon a number of stations in the neighbourhood of that city. But this

as mentioned above, applied to Philip for liberty to leave the Low Countries, on account of the bad state of his health, occasioned by the moisture of the climate, and the fatigues which he had undergone. This was believed by many to be only a pretence; while his request proceeded in reality from apprehensions, that the king had liftened to the representations of his enemies, and would foon confer his office upon another. There is very little reason, however, to suppose that Philip was in the fmallest degree diffatisfied with his conduct, fince he appears, in all his tyranny and violence, to have acted with strict conformity to his instructions. But Philip having at last become diffident of the success of those cruel measures, which he had hitherto prescribed,

Meurfii Albanus, p. 270. Meteren, p. 125.

H 3

had

50 0 K

had refolved, not from choice, but from neceffity, to make trial of fome more gentle expedients. He knew how unfit the duke of Alva was to be employed in the execution of this new plan of government; and he believed that no concessions would prove acceptable to the revolted provinces, that could be made by one who had rendered himself so much the object of their abhorrence. He had therefore readily consented that Alva should retire, and had, more than a year before the present period, appointed the duke de Medina Coeli, governor of the Netherlands in his room. This nobleman having found, upon his arrival, that the provinces were in a very different state from what he had expected, and that the charge which he had undertaken would probably be attended with much greater difficulty than glory, declined entering upon it, and afterwards obtained leave from Philip to return to Spain. He remained, however, in the Low Countries, till towards the end of the prefent year, when the new governor, Don Lewis de Zuniga, and Requesens, arrived. And foon afterwards the duke of Alva, who had come to Bruffels to receive Requefens, having refigned the regency into his hands, fet out with his fon, by the way of Germany and Italy, for Spain.

The new governor.

On this occasion men were affected vari- BOO oufly. Even all the protestants did not entertain the same sentiments with regard to the effects which the duke's departure was likely. to produce. While some rejoiced at it from the dread which they entertained of his abilities; others confidered, that for feveral months past his good fortune had forsaken him; and they believed that the abhorrence which his tyranny had excited towards his person and government, would, by proving a powerful bond of union among his enemies, effectually prevent them from liftening to any infidious terms of accommodation which the Spaniards might propose. civen enterrainment to here

HE was regarded both by the catholics and Alva's protestants, as the chief source of all the calamities in which the Netherlands had been involved. He had received his government from the dutchess of Parma, in a state of perfect tranquillity. By his tyranny, he had thrown it into the most terrible combustion. and kindled the flames of a destructive war. which he was confcious of being unable to extinguish, and had therefore applied for liberty to retire. He is faid to have boafted to count Koningstein', at whose house he lodged in his

held a correspondence with them in their exile-

Uncle to the prince of Orange.

BOOK XII.

way to Italy, that, during his government of five years and a half, upwards of eighteen thousand heretics had suffered by the hand of the public executioner; besides a much greater number whom he had put to the sword, in the towns which he took, and in the field of battle.

and formune had forth

His govern-

THE situation of the Low Countries during Alva's administration, was truly deplorable. His oppression was not confined to the protestants; but great numbers too of the catholics were put to death, and their effects forfeited, on the pretence of their having given entertainment to heretics, or of having held a correspondence with them in their exile. Wives were punished with the utmost severity for affording shelter to their husbands whom the council of tumults had condemned; children for performing the like kind offices to their parents; and in Utrecht, a father was executed for allowing his fon, who had returned from banishment, to lodge under his roof, for one night. By forcing fo many thousands of the most industrious inhabitants to leave the country, and by neglecting to provide a haval force to oppose the exiles at sea, commerce was almost entirely ruined; notwithstanding which, he imposed upon the people more oppressive taxes than they could have

have borne, if they had been in the most flour sook rishing condition. In levying these taxes, the utmost rigour was employed. The people 1573 were often wantonly provoked, and turnults purpofely excited, from which occasion was taken to punish them with confiscation of their goods, and fometimes both with death and confiscation. From the confiscations and taxes large fums were raifed; yet, by maintaining fo numerous an army, and by building citadels A to keep the principal towns in awe, as he received little affiftance from the king, who was engaged in other expensive enterprises, the fell behind in the payment of his troops; and in order to keep them in good humour, he permitted them to live at free quarters upon the inhabitants; against whom they exercifed; only many occasions, the most cruel and oppressive rapacity, beamand of bar attenue to li a so act.

the reparation and on the ment of fairly had the reading for allowing the reading who had to read fairly the reading for the reading for the reading for the reading for the reading to the reading to the reading of th

the state of the s

ארבה לכך בפילורים בנו לעד ל ... בל מואנפין נוד

11721

have bornes if they had been in the mod Rous # 0'0 E rithing condition. In levying their taxes, the utinoff vicour was employed. The people were often wantonly trovoked, and cumults ! purpolely excited, from which occasion was taken to punish them with confiscation of their goods, and formerimes both with death ands conflication. From the confiscations and taxes large films were tipled, yer, by manualing o numerous an army, and by building chalcheto keep the principal count incawe, as be seed to ceived little affifiance from the leine, who was engaged in other expenses carespotes, the fell of behind in payment of his moore, and in order/roduce sliem in good, hemisses he peters mitted the re to live at the quarter seron the inhabitants; against about their exercitive, on many over diamet, the west emed and appreciave

hoon

#### Sprin, Requelens bagy to government with demolihing Alva's flattic above mentioned, and

#### with refreshing the insidence of cortain garrifor Y at walle comitit his Swed besto Had connived. He then applied with great in-

duffy to make the necessary preparations for deed mive OF THE REIGN OF closely believed by the Redanders for more

### PHILIP THE SECOND.

KING OF SPAIN. -nilitation, to raide the fiege; but through the

# abortive inix londard of gevernor ind

Separationary of the Dutch fleet, they had proved

## few days, he would find a necessary to tur-

DHILIP could not have made choice of a BOOK more proper fuccessor to the duke of Alva than Requesens, who had acquired some military fame in the battle of Lepanto, and had di- Requesens. stinguished himself in the government of Milan, by his prudence and moderation; qualities from which Philip now hoped for greater fuccefs, in quelling the rebellious spirit of his subjects in the Netherlands, than had attended the violent administration of the duke of Alva.

1573. Character of

To shew as early as possible, that a change He applies of measures had been adopted by the court of himself to raisethesiege

Spain, of Middle-

B O O K. XIII.

Spain, Requesens began his government with demolishing Alva's statue above mentioned, and with repressing the infolence of certain garrifons, at whose enormities his predecessor had connived. He then applied with great industry to make the necessary preparations for the relief of Middleburg; which, having been closely befieged by the Zealanders for more than a year and a half, was now reduced to the last extremity. Several vigorous attempts had been made, during the duke of Alva's administration, to raise the siege; but through the fuperiority of the Dutch fleet, they had proved abortive; and Mondragon the governor had given notice, that if he was not relieved in a few days, he would find it necessary to furrender.

REQUESENS knew that nothing but the most pressing necessity would have drawn this declaration from an officer of so great spirit and fortitude as Mondragon. And he was sensible, that, upon the preservation of Middleburg, depended that of all the other towns in Zealand which retained their allegiance. He therefore postponed every other object of his attention; and having gone to Antwerp, he equipped there, and at Bergen-op-zoom, with the

Strada, ab init. anno one thousand five hundred and feventy-four.

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

100

utmost expedition, a fleet consisting of more 200 k than thirty ships, besides transports, with provisions and military stores to all states and states de Guerrand Romereur

hand a moderally the

1574

THIS fleet he divided into two fquadrons, one of which commanded by the vice-admiral, the fieur de Glimes and Julio Romero, he ordered to fail from Bergen, down the Easter Scheld; and the other under Sancio d'Avila. to fall down the Hondt or Wester Scheld, from Antwerp. By this measure, he intended to distract the enemy's attention, and to oblige them to divide their forces; and he hoped that at least one of the two squadrons might effectuate its entrance into the canal of Middleburg. of White come be administrative to a consequence

But the prince of Orange, whose adherents were numerous in every corner of the maritime provinces, had received early information of the governor's defign, and had likewife got intelligence of his plan of operations. Having passed over from Holland to the isle of Walcheren, and taken up his residence in Flushing, in order to assist the Zealanders with his counsel, William stationed a part of his fleet on the fouth coast of the island, to lie in wait for d' Avila; and fent all the rest, strong-

was every ed by Hom

Meteren, p. 131.

BOOK XIII.

1574

by manned, and well equipped for fighting, up the Easter Scheld, with orders, as soon as possible to attack the seet under the command of de Glimes and Romero.

Test floce the dwinded and even for algans,

Battle of Sacherlo.

Turs fleet, with the greatest part of the transports, had already set sail from Bergen; and Requesens, extremely anxious for its fate, had accompanied it as far as Sacherlo. There it cast anchor, and was waiting for the rising tide, when the Zealanders, commanded by Boifot admiral of Holland, arrived in fight. De Glimes foon perceived the superiority of Boifot's fleet, both in the fize and number of the thips, and was of opinion that he ought not to proceed in the intended enterprise; but he was overruled by Romero, who, prompted by his innate courage, and by that contempt, which, like the rest of his countrymen, he entertained for the Dutch infurgents, infifted that they should try the fortune of a battle. They accordingly weighed anchor, and advanced to the enemy. In the beginning of the engagement, De Glimes's own ship ran foul of a fand bank, from which she could not be disengaged. The Zealanders perceiving her diffress, attacked her on every side, and at length fet her on fire. Romero hastened to her affiftance; but all his attempts to extinguish the flames proved ineffectual. In a few minutes

fhe

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

3 0 0 R XIII.

the funk; after having communicated the flames to Romero's ship, that had come to her relief. Romero was obliged to jump overboard, and fave his life by fwilmming . The Zealanders had the fame fortunate fuccess against all the other ships of the enemy; they funk fome, burnt others, and took the reft. Befides De Glimes, and feveral other officers: near a thousand Walloons and Spaniards perished. The victory was decifive. And Requefens had the mortification, from the dike of Sacherlo, to be an eve-witness of this disafter. which was great in itself; but was rendered still greater, and more afflicting to him, by the fatal confequences with which he forefaw it must be attended. believe bark tentw to nogether M ex

D'Avilla in the mean time, with the squadron under his command, had sailed from Antwerp, and advanced as far as Flushing. Had he proceeded in his voyage without delay, he must have reached Middleburg, in spite of the Dutch sleet which had been stationed to oppose him; for it is not probable that he would have met with great resistance from that sleet, as the slower of all the forces belonging to it had been sent with Boisot. The prince of Orange, who knew this, was extremely appre-

nith officer whom he had taken pritoner, and

atti lo 3000 Mentfi Auriacus, p. 122. Ilutu (3700)

nullol 1

henfive

BOOK XIII.

A574.

hensive of the issue, and anxiously longed for Boisot's return; but he was soon delivered from his anxiety, by observing from a promontory near Flushing, that, instead of hastening forward, d'Avila had cast anchor, and seemed resolved to wait for the arrival of De Glimes and Romero. In a sew hours d'Avila received intelligence of their deseat; after which, despairing of being able to relieve the besieged, he immediately set sail for Antwerp. He was pursued by the enemy; but having betaken himself to slight in time, he arrived with very little loss at his destined port.

The farrender of Middleburg.

THE prince of Orange conveyed intelligence to Mondragon of what had passed, by a Spanish officer whom he had taken prisoner, and at the same time threatened, that if he did not furrender the town in a few days, the garrison should be put to the sword without mercy. Great numbers of the besieged had already died of hunger, or of the unwholesome food to which they had been obliged to have recourfe. Provisions of almost every kind, not excepting the flesh of dogs and horses, were confumed; nor had they any other food, but bread made of flax feed; and even this was nearly exhaufted. Mondragon perceiving that the destruction of the garrison, as well as of the inhabitants, must be the certain consequence of his refusing

refuling to capitulate, confented to give up BOOK both the reity of Middleburg and Armityden, on condition that the garrifons frould be allowed to depart with their arms and baggage, and that the ecclefiaftics, and all fuely of the catholic inhabitants as inclined to withdraw should have liberty to dispose of their effects, and be transported to the continent a William highly respected Mondragon on account of his gallant conduct during the fiege, and agreed to these conditions; but required that he mould pledge his honour that he would procure the release of St. Aldegond, and two or three more of the Protestant leaders, to return into captivity. In the fequel, Mondragon shewed himself worthy of the confidence which was repoted in him. By his intercession with Requesers, St. Aldegond and the other prisoners were fer at lidrender the town in a few days, the deprind flould be put to the Iword will

Notwithstanding this fignal triumph gained over Requesens in his first enterprise, the prince of Orange was not without apprehenfions, that the difference between his character and that of his predecessor, added to the difference of measures which he seemed determined to purfue, might produce some alteration in the fentiments of the people. The high milied well as of the atte

Apprehenprince of

Meteren parzo. Bentivoglio.

Vol. II.

tary

B O O K XIII. tary talents, the vigour and activity of Alva, had been objects of dread and terror. They had overawed most of the provinces, and rendered the efforts of others ineffectual; but as the oppressive violence of that tyrant had at first given birth to the revolt, so it had contributed more than any other cause to cherish and Support it. Under a milder and more artful governor, William dreaded not only that the inhabitants of the interior provinces would acquiesce in the established government, but that even the people of Holland and Zealand would be enticed, again to yield their necks to the Spanish yoke. And to prevent this, he employed every confideration that could work either on their hopes or fears.

He puts the people on their guard. THE king had fo far complied with their wishes, as to remove the duke of Alva; but how little reason they had to flatter themselves, that any greater regard would be now paid to their rights than formerly, was manifest from his choice of the new governor, who had procured his master's favour, by the exercise of cruelty over the Moors in Granada; and who, being a stranger and a Spaniard as well as Alva, could not be greatly interested in the prosperity of the provinces, nor have any other end in view, but to promote the tyrannical designs of the court of Spain. Requesens indeed had a

more

1574.

more benign and placid countenance than Alva; BOOK but the danger to which the provinces were exposed, was for this reason the more to be dreaded by every friend of his country. Amidst the governor's professions of concern for their prosperity, no mention had been made of freeing them from that enormous load of taxes under which they groaned; or of delivering their consciences from that restraint and violence, which the former governor had imposed upon them; or of restoring the laws which Alva had fo wantonly trampled under foot; or in fhort, of difmiffing those foreign troops, from whose rapacity they had fuffered such intolerable outrage. In order to accomplish these important purposes, the provinces of Holland and Zealand had taken up arms; and although the fortune of the war had been various, yet in spite of the most vigorous efforts of the duke of Alva, with a numerous army, to reduce them, these provinces were governed by their own inhabitants, and enjoyed the free and full possession of their religious and civil rights. The other provinces ought now to imitate the example of their countrymen, and they might reasonably hope that their endeavours would be attended with fuccess; the king having appointed a governor over them, inexperienced in the art of war, and unacquainted with the army under his command, which was

f

y

n

of

re

B O O K X:II. at present strongly infected with a spirit of sedition and discontent. It might perhaps appear rash and daring for the inhabitants of so narrow a territory as the Netherlands, to enter the lifts with fo potent an enemy as the king of Spain; but the power of that monarch was not in reality so formidable as it seemed. The great extent of his dominions ferved rather to embarrass and encumber him, than to add to his strength; and considering the distance of his place of residence, and the difficulty of transporting troops either from Spain or Italy, there was little reason to apprehend that he would ever be able to subdue the people of the Netherlands; if they acted with that unanimity and spirit which became them, in a cause, wherein, not only their property, and their existence as a commercial state, but their religion and civil liberty, were at stake."

The last attempt of count Lewis of Nassau. By these and such other arguments, did the prince of Orange animate the people to cooperate with him, in afferting their liberty, in opposition to the plan formed by the court of Spain to enslave them.

Mean while, his brother count Lewis, who had resided in Germany ever fince the surrender of Mons, was employed in attempting to persuade the protestant princes there, to assist him

him in his preparations for a new invalion of BOOK the interior provinces; to which, notwithstanding the failure of his former enterprises, Lewis was prompted, partly by his knowledge of the mutinous spirit of the Spanish troops, but chiefly by the prospect of that affistance which it was now in his brother's power to afford him. It was concerted between the two brothers, that as foon as count Lewis had finished his levies. the prince should advance with a body of troops towards the interior provinces, either to make a diversion in his brother's favour, or to unite their forces.

1574.

Lewis found it extremely difficult to procure money to defray the expence of his intended expedition. His brother's fortune, as well as his own were almost ruined by their former military enterprises. The States of Holland were involved in greater expence than they were able to support. They had, in conjunction with the prince of Orange, made application to the queen of England; but this princess, being unwilling to embroil herfelf with Philip, had refused to affift them. Lewis had begun his preparations, in hopes of receiving supplies from some German princes, who had promifed their affiftance, but who were either not inclined, or unable to fulfil their engagements. To fave himself from the

affront

B O O K XIII.

affront of abandoning an undertaking, in which a great number of French and German protestants had engaged at his request, he opened a negociation with Schomberg, ambaffador of Charles the Ninth of France, who at this time courted the favour of the protestant princes in Germany, with a view to facilitate the election of his brother the duke of Anjou, to the crown of Poland. Between Lewis and Schomberg, who met at Francfort on the Maine, it was agreed, That if Charles should, in behalf of the inhabitants of the Low Countries, declare war against the king of Spain, the provinces of Holland and Zealand should be immediately delivered into the hands of the French monarch; on his engaging to maintain all their rights, and in particular, the free exercife of the reformed religion. Charles should not make open war, it was agreed, that count Lewis should have three hundred thousand livres to affift him in his prefent enterprise; that the French king should have the fovereignty of Holland and Zealand, and that some of the German princes should be furety for the performance of this condition. A part of the money was paid, and Lewis was thereby enabled to complete his levies, which amounted to between three and four thousand horse, and seven thousand foot .

Thuanus, lib. lv. Meteren, p. 133.—Charles died foon after, and the treaty had no other consequences.

HE began his march, accompanied by his brother Henry, and Christopher, son of the elector Palatine, in the beginning of February; and despising the rigour of the season, he adyanced with great rapidity towards the Netherlands, in hopes of finding the governor unprepared. Having croffed the Rhine and the Mofelle, he directed his courfe towards Gelderland, with an intention to pass the Maese at Maestricht, and to pursue his march through Brabant, till he should unite his forces with those which his brother had engaged to bring to his affiftance.

WITH fo great dispatch and secrecy had The gover-Lewis conducted his preparations, that Re-plexity. quesens remained ignorant of his design, till he was informed that he had begun his march. By this intelligence the governor was thrown into great perplexity. His troops had been lately fo much reduced, that it was impossible for him to oppose both the brothers at the same time; and he confidered, that to unite his forces, and employ them against Lewis, would expose the maritime provinces an easy prey to the prince of Orange. His anxiety was increafed by the discovery of an intrigue, which had been formed by William's adherents, for the surprise of Antwerp. Nor was he entirely free from apprehensions that his troops might refuse I 4

S

d

١, e

A

13

h

d

d

Ix

BOOK XIII.

refuse to quit the towns in which they were stationed, till they should receive payment of their arrears. Having convened a council of his principal officers, and heard their opinions of the measures which they thought most proper to be purfued, he refolved to remain, together with the Marquis of Vitelli, in Antwerp, to watch the fecret machinations of the prince of Orange; and fuch troops as could be foonest drawn together, were immediately fent off under Sancio d'Avila, to oppose the passage of count Lewis over the Maefe. The reft followed foon after; having been perfuaded to leave their quarters, by a promise that their arrears should be paid, as soon as the provinces were delivered from the impending danger.

Lewis in the mean time advancing towards the frontier, had arrived within a few miles of Maestricht, where he pitched his camp; in expectation that his friends in the place would be able to make themselves masters of one of the gates. But Requesens having discovered his intention, had dispatched several companies of light armed troops before the main army, to secure the town. These troops arrived in time to prevent the friends of Lewis from executing their design; and in a few days afterwards, they were joined by d'Avila with the rest of the forces.

6

LEWIS was not prepared for undertaking the BOOK fiege of a place fo completely fortified as Maeftricht; and after some trials of strength in two or three skirmishes with the Spaniards, he decamped, and marched down the East side of the river, till he came to Ruremonde; but there too, as well as in Maestricht, the protestants were intimidated and overawed, and not a fingle person ventured to declare in his favour. He continued his march in the fame direction, resolving to hasten forward till he should join his brother, who was advancing to meet him in the country which lies between the Maefe and the Waal.

D'AVILA aimed at nothing for some time. but to prevent Lewis from transporting his army over the river, and with this view he had marched as near him as possible, having the river between them; but receiving a reinforcement of two thousand veteran troops, and finding, by the information of his spies, that Lewis had laid afide his first design of croffing the Maefe, and was on full march towards the prince of Orange, he confidered, that it was of the highest importance to prevent their junction; and that for this purpose it was neceffary to compel Lewis as foon as possible to engage. With this intention he proceeded with the utmost celerity down the river, and having

B O O K XIII. having croffed it by a bridge of boats at the town of Grave, he thus got between count Lewis and his brother's army. Lewis, anxious to prevent this, had avoided every unnecessary delay; but his troops, chagrined at being refused admittance first into Maestricht, and afterwards into Ruremonde, had proceeded in their march with much less alacrity than the Spaniards. He received the first intelligence of D'Avila's having croffed the Maefe when he arrived at Mooch, a village at the distance of only one league from the Spanish army, and on the same side of the river. He soon perceived the necessity to which he was reduced, either to give the enemy battle, or to retire. To retire, he faw, must be extremely difficult and dangerous, on account of the diforder and consternation which commonly attend a retreat; and therefore he did not helitate to try the fortune of a battle, although he knew how much inferior his undisciplined forces were to the Spaniards, who were felect veteran troops, animated by the consciousness of superior prowefs, and commanded by d'Avila, a person of extraordinary abilities, who, by merit alone, had raised himself from the station of a common foldier, to the rank of general.

Battle of Moocn.

To enable him to resist so formidable an enemy, Lewis resolved to remain in his present situation

1574

fituation at Mooch, and to cover his infantry BOOK with a strong intrenchment. His cavalry, though reduced by defertion, was still superior to that of the enemy; but from this superiority. the nature of the ground, which rifes into hills at a little distance from the river, did not suffer him to derive any considerable advantage. He drew them up as well as the unequal face of the country would permit, on the right of his camp; and upon a hill behind his main army, he placed a fquadron of chosen troops, with which he intended either to fix the victory. if it should appear doubtful; or, in case of a defeat, to open a passage through the enemy to his brother, who had now advanced as far as Nimeguen to meet him. He had just time to put his troops in order of battle when d'Avila arrived, having his infantry on the right, and and on the left his cavalry, flanked by a body of musqueteers, designed to support them against the superior numbers of the German cavalry.

D'Avila began the engagement by fending three hundred men to attack the enemy's lines, The troops which had been appointed to defend them, advanced brifkly towards the Spaniards, and gave them a gallant and resolute reception; but they were foon compelled to retire. The Spaniards followed, and attemptB O O K XIII.

ed to enter the camp along with them. The action there was bloody and obstinate, and fresh fuccours hastened from both armies to the affiftance of the combatants. But the cotemporary historians differ so widely from each other in their accounts of this engagement, that it is impossible to know the truth. Some authors affirm, that the Germans acquitted themselves with honour, and made a bold and vigorous refistance. Others fay, that only the French troops in count Lewis's army performed their duty, while the Germans refused to advance unless their arrears were paid, and remained obstinately in their camp till the Spaniards broke into it, and, after making prodigious havock among them, put them to an ignominious flight. In the beginning of the action, the German cavalry proved an overmatch for their antagonists, and having fallen with great fury on that part of the enemy's horse that was nearest them, they drove them to a distance from the field of battle; but when they were forming themselves again for a new attack, fome fresh squadrons of the Spanish cavalry advanced, and threw them into diforder. The Spanish musqueteers, who had been placed to support the horse, were then of signal use. With their shot they galled the Germans in flank, and greatly augmented their confufion. Count Lewis and the Palatine attempted, but

Lewis defeated and

but in vain, to rally them. These princes did BOOK every thing to restore the battle that could have been done by the most expert commanders, while they endeavoured to animate their troops by their example, and gave conspicuous proofs of the most heroic valour. Their efforts might have been crowned with fuccess, if a body of Spanish lances had not arrived when the German reiters had begun to give way. The reiters were overpowered; above five hundred of them were killed, and of the infantry between three and four thousand. The victory was decifive, and the value of it to the conquerors was greatly enhanced by the deaths of count Lewis, his brother Henry, and the Palatine; all of whom the cotemporary historians describe as having exerted the highest degree of vigour and intrepidity, although none of these writers were able to procure information of the manner in which they fell. Their death was matter of great lamentation to the protestant confederates, and especially the death of Lewis, who had made fo many great exertions in their behalf.

As foon as the prince of Orange received the melancholy news of this difaster, he began to return towards Holland, being convinced that now, when he was deprived of his brother's

Mutiny of the Spanish BOOK aid, it would be in vain for him to attempt to

WILLIAM expected that they would have immediately followed him, in order to improve their victory, whilst the terror which it inspired was recent; and they would probably have done fo, had not the Spanish troops sullied the glory which they had acquired, by rebelling against their officers on the next day after the battle. D'Avila could not instantly fulfil his engagement to pay their arrears. Almost three years pay was due to them. Even before the present expedition, their patience had been worn out, and it appears to have been the hopes of plunder, or the dread of confequences fatal to themselves, that induced them to march against the Germans, more than their confidence in the promise which D'Avila had made them. Being now freed from their apprehensions of personal danger, and disappointed in their expectations of being enriched by the spoils of the enemy, who were still poorer than themselves, they demanded from their general the immediate performance of his promife; and when they only received new affurances of the same kind as those with which they had been amused before, they threatened

Van Meteren, p. 132. Thuanus, lib. lix. sect. xv.

#### PHILIP H. KING OF SPAIN.

1574.

to take vengeance on him for his falsehood and BOOK deceit. He and the other officers endeavoured to appeafe them, but in vain. In order to avoid their fury, he was obliged to make his escape secretly from the camp; and immediately after his departure, they ran to arms, expelled their officers, and, having from among themselves elected other officers and a commander in chief, they quickly left Mooch, and directed their march to Antwerp, with an intention to live at free quarters upon the inhabitants of that wealthy city, till they should extort payment of their arrears.

REQUESENS having received intelligence of They take their design, had remained at Antwerp; and, Antwerp. if he had complied with the counsel of Champigny, governor of the town, and taken precautions for fecuring a part of the fortifications which was unfinished, he might have frustrated their attempt; but being extremely diffident of the Spanish part of the garrison, which had the fame ground of discontent with the mutineers, and flattering himself with the hopes of being able to appeale them, he suffered them to enter the city without refistance, to the number of three thousand men. They had no sooner entered, than they formed themselves in order of battle. The citizens were overwhelmed with terror, and many of them fled precipitate-

BOOK XIII.

ly out of the city. Requesens rode up to the mutineers, and remonstrating to them on the pernicious tendency of their conduct, he prayed, intreated, and threatened them; but could not, by addreffing either their hopes or fears, draw any other concession from them, but that they would abstain from plunder, on condition that they should receive immediate payment of their arrears, and that the Walloons and Germans under the command of Champigny, should be ordered to quit the town. With this last request, the governor thought it expedient to comply; and thus the mutineers were left in full possession of the place, without any force to controul them. The first object of their attention was to fecure the gates, after which they dispersed themselves over the city, and took up their quarters in the houses of the principal inhabitants, where they studied to create expence, and night and day to give disturbance and uneasiness. They were perpetually calling on the governor to fulfil his engagements; and as they daily threatened to fack and plunder the town, if he did not speedily comply with their requests, the people were disquieted with continual apprehensions and alarms. The mutineers required payment not only of their own arrears, but of those too which had been due to fuch of their companions as had died of difeases or fallen in battle.

1574.

battle. At length, the fum of one hundred thousand florins was raised by the inhabitants; and the governor was obliged to pledge his jewels and furniture for the remainder, and to grant a pardon confirmed by a folemn oath, to all concerned in this fedition; after which the mutineers returned under their former officers. and went to join the rest of the army which was now in Holland, and had already begun the siege of Leyden.

FROM this mutiny, Philip's interest in the Destruction Netherlands suffered greatly in several respects. seet. In the time of D'Avila's expedition against count Lewis, Requesens having exerted his utmost vigour and activity, had equipped a numerous fleet, which he intended to employ in the recovery of Zealand. When the mutineers arrived at Antwerp, this fleet, which was not yet of fufficient strength, lay under the walls of the city. Adolphus Hanstede, the commander, anxious for his charge, and apprehensive that the seditious foldiers might, in order to extort compliance with their demands, take possession of the ships, had removed them to a place at some distance from Antwerp, where they were out of the reach of the Spaniards. But, in avoiding this danger, he fell into a greater. The Zealanders, whose partisans were continually on the watch, quickly receiv-VOL. II. ed

e d

t

0

1-

in

e.

B O O K XIII. ed intelligence of his change of station, and refolved to improve the opportunity which was thus presented to them. Having attacked him when he was utterly unprepared for defence; they took forty of his ships; funk and destroyed feveral others; and rendered all the rest unfit for fervice. By this fevere blow, the plan which Requesens had projected, for recovering the maritime towns, was entirely disconcerted. The fleet now destroyed, was to have acted in conjunction with another, which Philip had been preparing in the ports of Spain. But as the Spanish fleet was deemed too weak to contend fingly with the enemy, the defign was laid afide for the present; and no future governor of the Low Countries ever found it practicable to revive it 8.

WHILST the Zealanders availed themselves of the sedition in the Spanish army by sea, the prince of Orange had been equally intent on deriving advantage from it by land. On receiving information of the sate of his brothers, he had begun his march towards Holland; but when intelligence was brought him that the Spaniards had mutinied, he resolved to improve the opportunity which this afforded him, by making some new acquisition. Passing over

<sup>5</sup> Bentivoglio, p. 149. Meteren, p. 137.

into the ifle of Bommel, which is formed by the confluence of the Maefe and the Rhine, he engaged the chief town in it to espouse his interest; and having fixed his head-quarters there for fome time, he gave support to his friends in the island, and reduced to great extremity such of the people as still adhered to the Spanish government. The marquis of Vitelli was dispatched by Requesens to oppose his progress. That able commander rendered abortive a defign which the prince had formed on Bois-le-duc; and the prince, on the other hand, took measures which prevented the town of Bommel from falling into the hands of Vi-But the attention of both was foon after this ingroffed by a more important and interesting object, the fiege of Leyden, to the relation of which I shall proceed, after mentioning an attempt of Requesens, to put an end to the war, by publishing a new act of indemnity in the name of the king.

ALTHOUGH feveral persons were excluded Act of infrom the benefit of this indemnity, yet it was much more comprehensive than that which had been published some time before by the duke of Alva. It did not however produce the defired effect. The people were not confcious of that guilt which Philip's pompous deed of clemency imputed to them; they believed that K 2 they

e n

-

S,

ut 16

ve

by er

00

347 to

B O O K XIII. they had fuffered wrong, instead of having done it; and they could not be grateful to him for dispensing with a punishment, which they thought it would have been in the highest degree tyrannical to inflict. Besides this, the pardon was clogged with a condition, by which almost all the inhabitants of Holland and Zealand, amounting to many hundred thousands, and great numbers too in the other provinces, were excluded. This was, that the protestants should renounce their religion, and return into the bosom of the church; a condition from which Philip's bigotry would never fuffer him to depart, nor the zeal and fincerity of the reformers permit them to ac-Requesens could not be ignorant of this, yet he entertained fome hopes at this time of bringing about an accommodation, by means of St. Aldegond, who had not as yet obtained his liberty. The governor fent Champigny and Junius de Jong to treat with him; but when St. Aldegond informed them that no peace would be ever agreed to by the maritime provinces, unless the question concerning religion were left to the decision of the States, Requesens, who knew that Philip would never confent to that condition, ordered the conference to be immediately diffolved b.

Bentivog'io, p. 150.

1574. The fiege

HE now bent his whole attention to the fiege of Leyden. He had blockaded that city for feveral months in the winter feafon, and reduced the inhabitants to great diffres; but he of Leyden. had been obliged to defift from his undertaking, and to call off his troops to oppose the German army. They left their stations in the neighbourhood of Leyden on the 21st of March, and refumed them on the 26th of May.

In order to form a just conception of the operations of this memorable fiege, it is neceffary to remember that Leyden lies in a low fituation, in the midst of a labyrinth of rivulets and canals. The city was large and populous; and at the time of the fiege was furrounded with a deep ditch, and a ftrong wall, flanked with bastions. That branch of the Rhine which still retains its ancient name. passes through the middle of it; and from this stream such an infinity of canals are derived, that it is difficult to fay whether the water or the land possesses the greater space. By these canals, the ground on which the city stands is divided into a great number of finall islands, united together by near a hundred and fifty stone bridges, that are equally subservient to the beauty of the place, and the convenience of the inhabitants. Levden is at the distance of a few hours journey from the Hague, Delft,

K 3

and

BOOK XIII. and Gouda, and only a little farther from Rotterdam on the one hand, and Haerlem on the other. On account of its fituation, as well as on its own account, it was deemed a place of the first importance, and a prize worthy of all the ardour which was displayed by the contending parties.

The prince of Orange, who had received notice of the governor's intention to renew the siege, communicated his intelligence to the citizens; and exhorted them to surnish themselves with stores of provisions, and to send out of the town all such persons as would be useless in defending it. They were not sufficiently attentive to these injunctions. The prince complained of their remissions, and informed them, that for three months at least it would not be in the power of the States to raise the siege.

To retard the approach of the Spaniards, he ordered ten companies of English adventurers, under the command of colonel Edward Chefter, to take possession of two forts, one at the sluice of Gouda, and the other at the village of Alphen, by which the enemy must pass in their way to the city. These troops did not answer the expectation which William had conceived of their behaviour. The five companies which

were placed at the fluice of Gouda, after a short relistance, betook themselves to flight; and the other five, after a skirmish in which no person fell on either side, basely imitated the example of their countrymen, and retired under the walls of Leyden. The citizens, who from their ramparts had beheld their ignominious behaviour, and fuspected them of treachery, refused to admit them within the town. The English ascribed their conduct to the insufficiency of the fortifications which they had been appointed to defend; but not being able to wipe out the suspicion entertained of their fidelity, they all deferted to the enemy, but a few whom the people of Leyden received with open arms and success and are

The prince of Orange having intended, that the English forces, after being obliged to quit their first stations, should have retired into the town, had not provided any other troops to defend it. The inhabitants were therefore reduced to the necessity of trusting for their defence, to their own valour and conduct: a circumstance, which at first had a formidable aspect, but which in the end proved the cause of their preservation; since it was thereby much longer a before they were reduced by famine, than it

Meteren, p. 139.

K 4

would

136

BOOK XIII. would have been, if, besides themselves, they had had a numerous garrison to support.

Janus Douza, chief magistrate of Leyden.

THE government of Leyden was committed on this occasion to Janus Douza', a person of noble birth; and well known in the literary world, by his poetical productions. By his example, and his eloquence, this illustrious patriot kindled in the minds of his fellow-citizens, fuch a zeal for liberty, and fo great an abhorrence of the tyranny of Spain, as rendered them superior to every distress, and in a great measure supplied their want of military skill. They must, however, have been found inferior to the Spaniards; and if Valdez, the Spanish commander, to whom Requesens committed the conduct of the fiege, had pushed his operations with proper vigour, he must certainly have made himself master of the town. But whether he wanted to fave his men, and to carry his end without bloodshed; or despaired, with the skill and force which he possessed, to be able to reduce fo strong a place by fack and ftorm, he did not think of any other expedient for fubduing it, but that of blocking it up on all fides, fo as to prevent the entrance of supplies. To this one point, all his operations were directed. By a circular chain of

The blockade is formed.

Or Jean Vander Does, lord of Noordwick.

more than fixty forts, which communicated BOOK with each other, and ran quite round the city, he invested it on every side, and not only rendered it impossible to introduce supplies, but even cut off all intelligence between the befieged and their friends in the other cities, except what was conveyed by pigeons, in the manner to which the protestants had recourse during the blockade of Haerlem'.

By one of the forts called Lammen, the befieged having been deprived of the benefit of pasturing their cattle in the neighbouring meadows, they fallied out with great fury upon the Spaniards, and almost got possession of the fort; but after an obstinate and bloody contest, they were at last obliged to retire. Spaniards fortified themselves in that station more strongly than before; and the besieged now despaired of being able, either in that, or any other quarter, to remove them to a greater distance from the city. Instead of this, they apprehended daily their nearer approach to it; and expected that they would foon open their batteries, in order to prepare for taking it by ftorm. This belief ferved to quicken the in- Conduct and

the inhabi-

1 These pigeons were embalmed, and are still preserved in the town-house of Leyden. Les delices des Pays bas.

habitants.

B O O K XIII.

habitants; and the women as well as the men were employed day and night, without ceafing, in strengthening the fortifications. account was taken of the stock of provisions within the town; and in order to make it hold out as long as possible, they began to husband it betimes. They were perpetually exhorting and animating each other, and expatiating upon the cruelty and perfidy of the Spaniards, and the unworthy fate of the people of Zutphen, Haerlem, and other places, who had trufted to their faith and mercy. When they were folicited to return to their allegiance by Lanoy, De Lique, and other natives of the Low Countries; they made answer, in the words of a Latin poet,

#### Fistula dulce canit volucrem dum decipit auceps.

To other letters, in which they were defired to reflect on the mifery to which they must ere long be reduced, they replied, that they had, upon the most mature consideration, resolved rather to die of hunger, or to perish with their wives and children in the slames of the city, kindled by their own hands, than submit to the tyranny of the Spaniards.

THAT

m Another faying, still more ferocious, is recorded by fome historians; That rather than submit to so persidious an enemy, they would feed on their lest arms, and defend themselves with their right. Van Meteren, ut supra.

1474. Their dif-

The States

at autoint

en geto day

THAT mifery which, during the first two BOOK months of the siege, existed only in idea, was at last realized. Their whole stock of ordinary provisions being confumed, they were tress. obliged to have recourse to the flesh of dogs and horses. Great numbers died of want; and many by the use of this unnatural food. The refolution of the people at length began to fail, and they now believed their present calamities to be superior even to those they should experience under the Spanish government. Some of them conceived a defign to deliver up the town, and formed a fecret affociation for this purpose. But their plot being detected, means were taken to prevent them from putting it in execution. A great number of people having come one day in a tumultuous manner to a magistrate whose name was Adrian, exclaiming that he ought either to give them food, or deliver the town into the hands of the enemy, " I have folemnly fworn, he replied, that I will never furrender myfelf, or my fellow-citizens, to the cruel and perfidious Spaniard; and I will fooner die than violate my oath. I have no food, else I would give it you. But if my death can be of use to you, take, tear me in pieces, and devour me; I shall die with satisfaction, if I know that by my death I shall for one moment relieve you from your direful necessity."

#### HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK XIII.

140

By this extraordinary answer, the people, struck with astonishment, were silenced, and their fury was for some time appeared.

The States resolve to lay the country under water.

THE prince of Orange, who was not ignorant of the extreme mifery to which the befieged were reduced, had done every thing in his power to accomplish their relief. He had already collected large supplies of provisions; but could not, with all his activity and address, raise a fusficient force to open a passage into the city. When he found that the fituation of the besieged would not admit of longer delay. he convened an affembly of the States of the province. And the deputies, after confidering the strength of the enemy, and the amount of their own forces, perceiving it to be impracticable to relieve the befieged, either by land, or by the river and canals, agreed to have recourse to an expedient, which was dictated by despair, and was the only one at prefent in their power to employ. They resolved to avail themselves, against the Spaniards, of that furious element, from which their country had often suffered the most dreadful devastation; to open their suices, to break down the dikes of the Maese and the Issel, and by thus laying all the country round Leyden under water, to get access to the besieged with their fleet. Nothing could be more repugnant

1574.

to the ideas of this people, than fuch a refolu- BOOK tion. To drain their lands, to exclude the water, and preferve their dikes, were then, as they are still, objects to the Dutch of almost continual attention, and which cost them annually an immense expence. But they were at present animated by objects still more important and interesting; and their love of liberty, joined to their dread of popery and the Spanish yoke, prevailed over every other consideration. The damage, which it was supposed would arise from the measure adopted, was estimated at fix hundred thousand guilders. But they considered, that if the Spaniards should succeed in their present enterprise, not only the region to be overflowed, but all the rest of the province, would fall under their fubjection. This the States regarded as infinitely worse than either poverty or death; and in their present disposition, they would have chosen to ruin the country altogether, rather than leave it to be enjoyed by an enemy whom they held in fuch abhorrence. They now applied themselves to the demolition of those mounds, upon which their existence as a nation depends, with a degree of industry and ardor, equal to that which they were accustomed to employ in repairing them, after the ravages of an inundation.

3 0 0 K KIH.

THE water, after its barriers were removed. diffused itself over all the adjacent fields; and in a few days, almost the whole region which lies between Rotterdam, Gouda, Delft, and Leyden, was overflowed. The Spaniards were thrown at first into the utmost dread and terror; but when they understood the cause of this unexpected inundation, and observed that the water did not rife above a certain height, they recovered from their aftonishment. They were obliged to abandon fuch of their forts as were fituated in the lower grounds, and to retire to those which stood higher; but of these last they hoped to be able to keep possession, and to continue the blockade, till the famine. which they knew raged in the town with dreadful fury, should conquer the obstinacy of the citizens, and bring the siege to a conclusion.

The prince of Orange, in the mean time, was employed in preparing every thing necessary to carry into execution the measure which the States had adopted. He ordered to be built, at Rotterdam and other places, near two hundred stat-bottomed vessels, having each of them ten, twelve, fourteen or sixteen oars; and these he mounted with guns, and manned with eight hundred Zealanders; a rude and savage, but a brave and determined band, animated

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

143

1574

mated at once by religious zeal, and the most Book implacable hatred against the Spaniards; and whose appearance was rendered horrid by the fcars of innumerable wounds, which they had received in their late naval engagements. They were brought from the fleet by Boiffot, the admiral of Zealand, to whom the conduct of the present enterprise was committed ...

WITH fuch of the vessels as were already equipped, Boissot left Delft in the beginning of September, and directed his course towards Leyden. But the water had not as yet rifen to a fufficient height, and the banks of the rivers and canals, in which only there was a proper depth of water, were fo ftrongly fortified, as to render his approach to the city impracticable. From fome of their forts he obliged the Spaniards to retire, but others were of sufficient strength to withstand his most vigorous attacks. In order to avoid thefe, he broke down more dikes as he advanced, and in his progress, had several bloody engagements with the enemy. The blockade, however, remained still as close as ever. Boissot began to be apprehensive of the issue. Heaven seemed not

The spirit by which these men were actuated, may be conceived from their method of diffinguishing themselves; which was by wearing a half moon on the r caps, with this inscription, Turks rather than papists. Meteren, p. 140.

144

BOOK XIII.

to favour his defign. The north wind continued much longer than had been ever known at the present season, and retarded the water in its ascent. The prince of Orange, when Boisfot entered upon this expedition, had been confined to his chamber by a dangerous illness. He was now recovered, and came to visit the admiral's disposition of his ships, which he found to be exactly conformable to the directions which the States had given him; but their design, the prince perceived, must prove abortive, and all their labour and expence be lost, unless the wind should change soon to another quarter, and the autumnal tides rise as usual.

The anxiety and mifery of the citisens. WITH extreme impatience they now expected the approach of these tides, which are commonly the subject of their dread and terror. The situation of the besieged was become the most deplorable and desperate. During seven weeks there had not been a morsel of bread within the city; and the only food had been the roots of herbs and weeds, and the sless of dogs and horses. Even all these were at length consumed; and the people reduced to live on soup made of the hides of animals which had been killed. A pestilence succeeded to the samine, and carried off in a sew weeks some thousands of the inhabitants. Those who survived, overwhelmed with anguish at the dis-

mal

1574.

mal scenes which they daily beheld, were scarce- BOOK ly able to perform the mournful office of burying the dead. In this dreadful fituation, they faw from their walls, the fails and flags of the vessels destined for their relief; but had the mortification to perceive, that it was utterly impossible for them to approach. It is not furprifing that some of the people, finding their mifery greater than they were able to endure, should have entertained the thoughts of surrendering the town to the enemy. Some conspiracies were again formed for this purpose; but they were discovered and defeated by the vigilance of Douza, supported by a great majority of the people, to whom neither the pestilence, nor famine, nor death, in its most hideous forms, appeared so dreadful, as the tyranny of the Spaniards.

Bur the time of their deliverance was at Their delihand; and Heaven interposed at last in a confpicuous manner in their behalf. Towards the end of September, the wind changing from the north-east to the north-west, poured the ocean into the mouths of the rivers with uncommon violence; and then veering about to the fouth, it pushed the water towards the plains of Leyden, till they were converted into a spacious lake, in which the Spanish forts were seen VOL. II. fcattered

144

BOOK XIII.

1574-

to favour his defign. The north wind continued much longer than had been ever known at the present season, and retarded the water in its ascent. The prince of Orange, when Boisfot entered upon this expedition, had been confined to his chamber by a dangerous illness. He was now recovered, and came to visit the admiral's disposition of his ships, which he found to be exactly conformable to the directions which the States had given him; but their design, the prince perceived, must prove abortive, and all their labour and expence be lost, unless the wind should change soon to another quarter, and the autumnal tides rise as usual.

The anxiety and milery of the citisens. With extreme impatience they now expected the approach of these tides, which are commonly the subject of their dread and terror. The situation of the besieged was become the most deplorable and desperate. During seven weeks there had not been a morsel of bread within the city; and the only food had been the roots of herbs and weeds, and the sless of dogs and horses. Even all these were at length consumed; and the people reduced to live on soup made of the hides of animals which had been killed. A pestilence succeeded to the famine, and carried off in a few weeks some thousands of the inhabitants. Those who survived, overwhelmed with anguish at the dis-

mal

1 574·

mal fcenes which they daily beheld, were fcarce- BOOK ly able to perform the mournful office of burying the dead. In this dreadful fituation, they faw from their walls, the fails and flags of the veffels destined for their relief; but had the mortification to perceive, that it was utterly impossible for them to approach. It is not furprifing that some of the people, finding their mifery greater than they were able to endure, should have entertained the thoughts of surrendering the town to the enemy. Some conspiracies were again formed for this purpose; but they were discovered and defeated by the vigilance of Douza, supported by a great majority of the people, to whom neither the pestilence, nor famine, nor death, in its most hideous forms, appeared so dreadful, as the tyranny of the Spaniards.

Bur the time of their deliverance was at Their delihand; and Heaven interposed at last in a confpicuous manner in their behalf. Towards the end of September, the wind changing from the north-east to the north-west, poured the ocean into the mouths of the rivers with uncommon violence; and then veering about to the fouth, it pushed the water towards the plains of Leyden, till they were converted into a spacious lake, in which the Spanish forts were seen VOL. II. **fcattered** 

BOOK fcattered up and down, and many of them almost covered with the water.

Boissor feized with ardor the opportunity which was thus presented to him. And though feveral of the enemy's fortifications still lay in the way by which it was necessary for him to advance, he foon obliged the Spaniards to abandon them. The Zealanders purfued them, fometimes on foot along the dikes, and fometimes in their boats; and had feveral fierce rencounters with them, in which, from the advantage which their boats afforded them, they were every where victorious. The fituation of the Spanish troops at this time was truly deplorable. Some were fwallowed up in the mud and water; and others attempting to march along the dikes, were either killed by the fire from the boats, or dragged down with hooks fixed to the ends of long poles, and put to the fword without mercy. Fifteen hundred perished in their retreat.

ALL the forts were now forfaken, except the fort above mentioned, called Lammen, of which, if the Spaniards had kept possession, they might have retarded the approach of the sleet for several days. This fort was much stronger, and stood higher than the rest. But when the garrison understood that their general had

BOOK XIII.

I574.

had fled, and that the Zealanders on the one hand, and the befieged on the other, were preparing to begin an attack, they abandoned their station, and by torch light effectuated a junction with the rest of the forces, in the middle of the night.

In this manner was the fiege of Leyden raifed, in the beginning of the fifth month after the blockade was formed. Boissot advanced without delay to the gates of the city. The people, pale and meagre, ran, as their small remains of strength would allow, to meet him; and many of them so greedily devoured the food which he distributed, that what was intended for their relief, proved the cause of their instant destruction; for provisions of every kind in the city had been entirely exhausted, and the besieged were so weakened, that if the blockade had continued two days longer, they must all have perished.

They escaped still more narrowly from falling into the hands of the enemy. In the night immediately preceding, and at the very time when the Spaniards were making their retreat from the fort of Lammen, a great part of the wall of the city having fallen down, the noise reached the ears of the Spaniards; who, if they had known the cause, might have entered the town without resistance. But their dread represented the noise to their imaginations as the approach of the enemy, and served only to precipitate their flight.

f

e

h

it

al

d

L 2

WHEN

B O O K XIII. When they were somewhat refreshed with the food which Boissot had brought, they accompanied the magistrates to one of the churches, to render thanks to the Almighty. Never was any affembly more deeply agitated. By the consideration of their signal and unexpected deliverance, when they were upon the brink of ruin; joined to their remembrance of the dismal scenes which they had witnessed, and of the many friends and sellow-citizens whom the samine and pestilence had carried off, their minds were overpowered at once with gratitude and sorrow. They were dissolved in tears; and mingled together the voices of praise and of lamentation.

THE cotemporary historians have further recorded, that when the prince of Orange received information of the raising of the siege, being engaged in public worship in one of the churches at Delft, he stood up, and read to the audience the letters which contained the intelligence; after which, the States being convened, a day of general thanksgiving was appointed.

The Spanish army took their route by the way of Amsterdam and Utrecht, and attempted to get possession of the last of these places by surprise; but the gates being shut against them,

them, and a contribution of money offered, they were prevailed on to pursue their march towards Maestricht, where they were put into winter-quarters <sup>p</sup>.

B O O K XIII.

P Meteren, p. 139. Meursii Auriacus, p. 130. Bentivoglio, p. 151.

The Spaniards threw all the blame of the failure of their enterprise upon their general; whom they accused of having been remiss in his operations against the town, on account of a bribe of two hundred thousand florins, which they alleged he had accepted, either from the States of Holland or from the people of Leyden. Whether there was any ground for this accusation, does not appear with sufficient evidence. But the soldiers slew to arms, seized his person, and confined him, till he agreed to pay them the two hundred thousand florins, which, they said, he had received from the Hollanders.

I of the second being the

introde wood essential publishment in Admiiographi puli tipisi kulika But es etgipi y edha I diliw Lakisasuni endersat garatti a box arress sternoochitasestatus un känisa

habita dan kanalan kanalan kanal

Sport Tak Marine

C

es it

1,

PART

L 3

## PART II.

BOOK XIII. 1575. Negociations for

reace.

HE difficulties which the Spaniards encountered in the feveral enterprises that have been related, gave Philip a very different idea of the spirit, vigour, and resources of the malcontents, from what he had hitherto entertained; and determined him to listen to an offer, which his cousin the emperor Maximilian made at this time, of mediating a reconcile-Maximilian was prompted to interpofe his influence, partly perhaps by concern for the interest of his kinsman, but chiefly by his apprehension, that through the close connection which subsisted between the Dutch and German protestants, the flame which raged with fo much fury in the Low Countries, might at last diffuse itself into Germany. Having therefore interceded with Philip to grant the infurgents favourable terms, and obtained powers to negociate an agreement, he transferred these powers to count Scwartzenburg, whom he fent into Holland, in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and feventy-five, attended by feveral German nobles. On the count's arrival in Dort, he had an interview with his kinfman the

1575.

the prince of Orange; with whom he employed all his own influence, and that of the emperor, from whom he brought a confidential letter to the prince. From the respect due to the emperor, William confented to a congress in the city of Breda. But as he could not be perfuaded, that Philip would be ever brought to offer conditions, which the States could accept with fafety, he believed, that the treaty proposed would prove abortive, and therefore he exhorted the States to keep themselves in a posture of defence, and to profecute with vigour their preparations for renewing the war, when the congress should be dissolved. The prince himself was not of the number of the deputies; nor did those who were appointed, though less obnoxious to Philip's resentment, think it fafe to trust themselves in the power of the Spaniards in Breda, till Romero, and Mondragone, and two other persons of distinction, were fent into Holland as hostages.

From the proceedings at this congress, and the mutual diftrust which the deputies discovered, the reader will eafily perceive the causes which rendered ineffectual, not only the prefent attempt, but likewife all the endeavours which were afterwards employed, during the fpace of forty years, to reconcile the contending parties.

L 4

THE

BOOK XIII. 1575-March 14th, THE demands of the States of Holland and Zealand confifted of two articles; that the governor should immediately dismiss the foreign troops; and that a general assembly of the States of all the provinces should be held to determine the several points in controversy, whether civil or religious,

In answer to these requests, the Spanish deputies observed, that it was unreasonable to call the Spaniards by the name of foreigners, fince they were equally the subjects of the king as the people of the Netherlands, and had done him the most fignal fervice, in that very country from which he was now requested to expel them. That the Germans, French, and English, in the service of the States, might with much greater propriety be denominated foreigners. That the king did not intend, in case peace were established, to retain the Spanish troops in the Low Countries longer than necessity should require; but that it would be highly improper to urge him any further on this subject, as he could not, consistently with honour, difmifs the forces in the prefent posture They added, that after tranof his affairs. quillity was restored, the king would not be averse to the convocation of the States, nor oppose their deliberating concerning such affairs as properly belonged to them. That he would

1575.

be ever ready to listen to their counsel, and BOOK would regulate his conduct agreeably to it in every thing that was just and reasonable. And that, in the mean time, he was graciously pleased to make them an offer of a full indemnity of their past offences, upon the following conditions: That all cities and forts, with their artillery and stores, should be delivered into his hands; that every heretical form of worship should be proscribed; and that all such persons as were unwilling to forsake their errors, should dispose of their effects and leave the country,

To these declarations and offers of the Spanish deputies, those of the States replied, that notwithstanding what had been faid, they must still adhere to their first request of having the provinces delivered from the oppression of the Spanish and other foreign troops. troops were indeed subjects of the king of Spain; but they were not subjects of the duke of Brabant, or the earl of Flanders, Holland, or any other of the provinces, in which therefore they could not be fuffered to remain, without a violation of a fundamental law of the constitution. It was true, that the French and English troops were foreigners; but these troops had come into the Low Countries at the defire of the States; they had never assumed to them154

BOOK

themselves any share in the government, and were deemed necessary by the States for their defence against the Spaniards; whereas the Spaniards had, from their first entrance into the Netherlands, treated the inhabitants as enemies and flaves; had arrogated to themselves every important branch of the administration, and had, on many occasions, exercised the most unrelenting cruelty, indulging, in the most abandoned manner, their lawless lust and avarice, to the utter ruin of great numbers of the innocent and faithful fubjects of the king. It would be impossible to restore tranquillity to the provinces while these men were allowed to remain, nor were they friends to the king or the peace proposed, who advised him to retain them. If the service which the king had received from his Spanish troops, were compared with the mischief of which they had been the authors, it would be found that they had done infinitely greater harm than good; and that, by the lawless rapine which they had exercifed, they had received much more than a fufficient compensation for all their services. The inhabitants of the Low Countries were conscious of having often contributed to advance the glory of the Spanish crown. Nor could even their late conduct, if justly confidered, be interpreted as a breach of their duty to the king, fince they had never opposed his

1575.

his exercifing any rights which appearained to BOOK him as fovereign of the provinces; and although they had taken up arms, they had never employed them but in vindicating those rights and privileges which the king himself had fworn to maintain, or in defending their lives and fortunes, their wives and children, against the violence and lawless tyranny of the Spaniards.

Ir gave them much concern to find, that the king would not agree to fummon an affembly of the States till peace should be restored, as they were convinced that no other means fo effectual could be devised for establishing peace on a firm and permanent foundation. It gave them still greater concern to hear the depizties. in the name of the king, express themselves, as if they looked upon the States only as counfellors, whose advice he would or would not follow, according as he should judge expedient. This they could not help confidering as an intimation, that the States were to be limited in the exercise of their authority; and if this was intended, no useful purpose could be served by calling them together. With the conditions annexed to the proffered indemnity, it was impossible they could comply. They could not deliver the cities and forts into the hands of the Spaniards, without being apprehenfive

156

ROOK XIII.

henfive of the fraud exemplified in the fable of the war between the wolves and the sheep, in which the latter were perfuaded to give up their auxiliaries the dogs into the hands of their crafty foes. For they had not forgotten the fate of the counts Egmont and Horn, and many others, who repented, when it was too late, of putting faith in promises which their enemies could violate with impunity. And with respect to the other condition, that all heretics should quit the country, as they could not believe the religion now established in Holland and Zealand to be heretical: fo if all who had renounced the popish faith were to be deemed heretics, and expelled from the Netherlands, there would not be a fufficient number left to keep the dikes in repair; the country would be ftript of the greatest part of its inhabitants, and ere long be buried in the waves. They concluded with intreating the deputies to take the representation they had made in good part, as proceeding from their zeal for the interest of the king as well as of the provinces; and with praying Almighty God to inspire the king and his ministers with milder fentiments than those which they had hitherto embraced.

In the reply which was made to this remonfirance, the Spanish deputies, after complaining of the spirit in which it was composed, said

that

1575.

that the king would fo far comply with the request relative to the foreign troops, as to fend them away immediately after the terms of peace were fettled; provided the States would at the fame time difmiss the foreigners in their fervice, and deliver up the cities and other fortified places. He would likewife fummon the affembly of the States, as foon as the prefent diffurbances had fubfided; but he could not, confiftently with his dignity, fubmit to their decision, the conditions on which peace was to be established; fince this would be to abandon what he regarded as his peculiar prerogative, and to allow them to prescribe where it was their duty to obey. In particular, he was determined never to refer to their decision the important question concerning religion. States, as well as the king, had fworn to maintain the catholic faith; and no consideration would ever prevail on him to fuffer them to depart from it in the smallest article. He was not afraid of depopulating the maritime provinces by the expulsion of heretics; on the contrary, he believed that these provinces would flourish more, for that tranquillity which unity of faith would enfure; and if the heretical ministers were removed, he doubted not that the people would foon perceive the folly into which they had been betrayed, and return into the bosom of the church.

THE

BOOK XIII. 1575. May 31ft. Final anfwer of the States,

THE deputies of Holland and Zealand, after confulting their conftituents, gave the following as their ultimate reply, That they were willing to refer the feveral points of difference, the difmission of the Spanish troops, the delivering of the cities, forts, and military stores, the nature of the security to be given for fulfilling the conditions of the peace, and even the article of religion, to the general affembly of the States of all the provinces: and they were willing, they faid, to make the last of these concessions, not from any intention of giving up their religion, which no confideration would induce them to forfake; but from the deep concern which they felt on account of the long continued calamities of their fellow-citizens; to put an end to which, they were ready to abandon their native country, if the States should find it necessary to establish a religion, with which their consciences would not suffer them to comply.

The conferences diffolved, COUNT Scwartzenburg now perceived that no greater concession could reasonably be expected. He represented to the governor, that considering how deep the protestant religion had struck its roots in the maritime provinces, the extirpation of it could not be speedily accomplished; and he urged him to grant a truce for six months, during which time the exercise

of

of that religion should be permitted, and every BOOK lenient measure employed to footh and conciliate the minds of the people. But Requesens had not authority from the king to agree to this request; and he refused to grant even a truce of two months, except on condition that the protestants should abstain from their mode of religious worship, and oblige their ministers immediately to quit the country. With this condition Count Scwartzenburg knew that the maritime provinces would never be perfuaded to comply. He therefore despaired of being able to bring his negociation to the defired iffue, and foon after fet out for Germany. The congress was dissolved. The hostages were restored; and the contending parties, having their refentment more inflamed than ever, applied themselves to the prosecution of the war P.

THE deputies had no sooner left Breda, than The war re-Requesens published an edict, prohibiting all communication with the malcontents; and immediately afterwards fent his troops, under the July 12th. count de Hierges, to lay siege to the town of Buren; which they foon obliged to capitulate. From Buren they marched to Oude-water, and in spite of a brave and vigorous defence, they took it by from; exercifing at this place their

wonted

Meteren, p. 146-152. Bentivoglio, lib. ix. ab initio.

B O O K XIII. wonted fury, and putting the garrison and all the inhabitants to the fword, without distinction either of sex or age. Hierges proceeded next to Schowen upon the Leck. The prince of Orange made haste to send a reinforcement to the garrison. But the inhabitants, dreading the same sate as that of the people of Oudewater, obliged the garrison to surrender. After which, Hierges directed his march towards Crimpen. Vitelli, in the mean time, with the forces under his command, reduced a number of places which lie between the Leck and the Vahal; and Mondragone was no less successful in the quarter of Holland, which borders upon Brabant.

The governor undertakes the conquest of Zealand, But Requesens did not incline that his troops should push their conquests in Holland any surther at present. In compliance with his instructions, he resolved to bend his whole attention to the reduction of some of the principal towns in Zealand, which Philip was desirous of acquiring, for the reception of a sleet to be sent from Spain. In order to accomplish this design, Requesens drew off his troops from Holland; and had, some time before, prepared a number of slat-bottomed vessels, proportioned to the depth of the gulfs and canals. In these vessels he intended to have transported his troops to Zealand; but the prince of Orange

having received intelligence of his design, and BOOK collected a naval force of the fame kind, much fuperior in number, he relinquished his first plan, and adopted another that seemed equally difficult and dangerous This was to imitate what was done by Mondragone, when he raifed the fiege of Tergoes, and to make the foldiers wade through an arm of the fea, which was would be unable to defend the browdeslim-seil

even allowing that they should furnount their

1575.

In the north-east parts of Zealand, there are three islands much larger than the rest; Tolen, Duveland, and Schowen. Tolen, which lies nearest to Brabant, was in the hands of the Spanlards; and between this island and Duveland, lies the little isle of Philipsland, which is separated from Duveland by the canal, or arm of the fea, over which Requesens intended that his forces should pass on foot. It was known from some experiments which had been made, that this canal was fordable; nor was it quite fo broad as that which Mondragone's troops had passed over to the relief of Tergoes. But there was still much reason to suspect that the attempt would be found impracti-Cableanembranelds victories, formed to their contempt

fingular enterprife of the Spani-

Such of the officers as were of this opinion, observed, that there was a wide difference between the enterprise in question, and that of VOL. II. MondraB O O K

1575.

Mondragone, whose men had no other obstacles to encounter but those of the passage, and needed only strength and patience to enfure fuccess; whereas, in the present case, the enemy having taken the alarm, were continually upon the watch; and the ford was in a manner belieged by their numerous veffels, which were ready to attack the Spaniards, when they would be unable to defend themselves. And even allowing that they should surmount these difficulties, and effectuate their passage, yet what remained for them, on their approach to the opposite shore, but to be attacked by a fresh and vigorous enemy, advantageously posted, before they could disentangle themselves from the mud and water.

By these considerations, some of the principal officers were induced to remonstrate against the intended enterprise, as too hazardous and desperate; and they were of opinion, that no attempt ought to be made on Zealand till the sleet from Spain should arrive. But this prudent counsel was not suited to the bold intrepid spirit which animated the greater part of the Spanish officers. The remembrance of their former victories, joined to their contempt of the malcontents, inspired them with considence of success; and they were unwilling to divide the glory of their conquests with their country-

B O O K XIII.

countrymen, who were supposed to be on their way from Spain. If this enterprise, said they, be impracticable in the day, why may we not undertake it in the night, when we shall either elude the vigilance of the enemy, or, if they get information of our design, yet we shall have little reason to dread their efforts, as they will be obliged to sire their guns at random, and spend their force in air. The troops posted on the other side to oppose our landing, will act, as their countrymen have often done on similar occasions. The boldness of our adventure, and the daring countenances of our men, will overwhelm their dastardly spirits with dismay and terror.

Requestes was not naturally fond of rash or daring enterprises; but being exceedingly desirous to carry his scheme of subduing Zealand
into speedy execution, he transported three
thousand select troops, composed of an equal
number of Spaniards, Walloons, and Germans,
to the isle of Philipsland. Then having ordered d'Avila to attend him with the sleet, on
board which he put one half of these forces, he
gave the command of the other half, destined
to attempt the passage, to Osorio d'Ulloa, a
Spanish officer of distinguished courage, who
had warmly exhorted him to undertake this
bold and singular expedition.

BOOK XIII.

1575.

On the 28th of September, as foon as it was dark, and the tide had begun to retire, Ulloa entered the water at the head of his troops, with the guides before him. The troops were followed by two hundred pioneers; and the rear-guard was formed by a company of Walloons, commanded by an officer of the name of Peralta. They could march only three men a-breaft, on the top of a ridge of earth or fand, and were often obliged to wade up to the shoulders, and to bear their muskets on their heads, to preserve them from the water. They had advanced but a little way, when the Dutch and Zealanders approached, and began a furious discharge of their small arms and artillery. And not fatisfied with this, many of them leaped into the water, and with hooks fastened to the ends of long poles, laid hold of the foldiers, oppressed with the weight of the element through which they toiled; maffacring fome, and plunging others in the waves. Nothing but the darkness of the night, which prevented the two fquadrons of the enemy's ships from acting in concert, could have faved the royalists But, notwithstanding the from destruction. difficulties under which they laboured, they perfifted bold and dauntless in their course, exhorting and affifting one another; and without quitting their ranks, repelling the enemy, and defending themselves as well as their desperate circum-

HIK 15752

circumstances would allow. Their calamities BOOK increased as they approached to the opposite shore. For besides, that their vigour was impaired, they had deeper water to pass, and the enemy's fhips could come nearer to the ford. At last; however, they reached the land, in time to fave themselves from destruction. The banks were lined with a numerous body of troops; and if these troops had behaved with an ordinary degree of refolution, it is impoffible that the Spaniards, drenched as they were with mud and water, and exhaufted with fatique, could have flood before them. But unfortunately, in the beginning of the attack; their commander was killed, by ian accidental that of one of his own men. Consternation feized his troops, and they fled in the most daftardly manner, before an enemy unable to him, to transform the refr of his forces to. sulruq

THIS extraordinary adventure, though it fucceeded beyond what could justly have been expected, was not executed without loss. The pioneers were all either overtaken by the tide, or deftroyed by the enemy. The rear-guard under Peralta faved themselves by returning back. Of the troops under Ulloa, a confiderable number was killed or drowned, and others wounded. But among the killed there was only one person of distinction, named Pacheco; M 3 concerning

land; where they joined their companions, and

# 0 0 K

concerning whom it is recorded, that being wounded by a musket-shot, and unable to advance, and some of his men urging him to suffer them to bear him on their shoulders; he replied, "That would serve only to retard your march. My wound is mortal; I die, and not without some honour, in so glorious an enterprise." Saying this, he sunk down into the water?

When the Dutch and Zealanders faw that, in spite of their opposition, the royalists had accomplished their design, they quitted the canal, and went to give notice of what had happened to the inhabitants of the sea-port towns, which they supposed the enemy intended to attack. Requesens immediately laid hold of the opportunity which their departure afforded him, to transport the rest of his forces to Duveland; where they joined their companions, and foon compelled all the protestant troops on the

Bentivoglio, p. 168. This historian gives the same authority for the above mentioned particulars, as for those of the passage at Tergoes; the testimony of Rivas, governor of Cambray, who was an actor in both.

The Spaniards were not a little encouraged by an appearance then rare, but fince familiar and common, an Aurora Borealis, or northern light; which shone all the time of their passage, and which they interpreted as a sign wrought by Heaven in their behalf.

island

island to fly over to Ziricsee, the capital of BOOK XIII.

1575.

THE reduction of that city was the immediate and principal object of the present expedition. For besides, that Requesens hoped, by possessing Ziricsee, to be able to disturb the communication between Holland and Zealand, he confidered it as the fittest place for the reception of the reinforcement which he expected from Spain; and he intended to make it the feat of his strength in that quarter, till he should collect a naval force sufficient to ensure the conquest of Middleburg, Flushing, and the other towns in Walcheren. Towards Ziricfee, the army now commanded by Mondragone, proceeded without delay. Before they could reach it, they found it necessary to pass over the canal, which separates Duveland from Schowen, and on the opposite side of which they faw the enemy prepared to dispute their passage. This did not deter them from the profecution of their defign. Animated by the example of their leaders, they leaped without hesitation into the canal, which was near a league over, having the bottom full of mud, and advanced forward with fuch undaunted intrepidity, that the enemy, regarding them with aftonishment, abandoned their station, and left the passage free and undisputed.

M 4

MONDRA-

BOOK XIII.

The desperate desence of Bommene.

MONDRAGONE would have immediately begun the siege of Ziricsee, but thought it necesfary before-hand to make himself master of certain posts, which the Zealanders had fortified, in order to fecure the communication between the inhabitants of that town, and their friends in the other islands and on the continent. These forts were three in number; one on the fouth near Borendam, and the other two called Browershaven and Bommene, on the north and east. Through the imprudent confidence of the Spaniards, who made an affault on the first of these forts too soon, it cost the lives of fixty of that nation, with Peralta their commander: befides a confiderable number of Germans and Walloons. The fort of Bowershaven submitted without resistance; but that of Bommene, which was better fortified, was likewife more valiantly defended than the other Du Lis, a French officer, commanded the garrison, confifting of Germans, French, and English; into whose breasts he had infused the fame generous and dauntless spirit with which he himself was animated. The behaviour and fate of this brave determined garrison deserves a place in history. At the time of high water their fortification was impregnable. as at that time the fea filled both the ditch which furrounded it, and a canal which paffed through it; but at low water and for some hours

hours before and after that time, the ditch was Book fordable, and the enemy could advance to the very foot of the wall. Both Requesens and Vitelli had come to direct the operations of the fiege. Agreeably to their commands, the royalifts, after approaching as near as possible to the ditch, by means of trenches, opened a large battery, which continued firing upon the fort for two days inceffantly, till a fufficient breach was made. Then waiting till the water had retired, they made a furious affault; but the befieged withstood their most vigorous efforts, and at last obliged them to retire, with the loss of a hundred and fifty killed, and twice that number wounded. The Spaniards enraged on account of their repulse and loss, returned to the affault next day, and began to ftorm the fort on different fides at the fame time. Both parties were highly agitated with fury and despair, and both were alike determined either to die or conquer. The prospect of the returning tide wrought equally on the fears of the affailants, and the hopes of the befieged. The former knew, that if they did not carry their point foon, they must a second time suffer the shame and slaughter of a repulse, and the latter confidered, that if they could hold out a few hours longer, the water would deliver them for the present, and the enemy be perhaps deterred from renewing the affault. Incited by thefe

¥575.

go o K these reflections, the combatants on both fides exerted all their vigour, and displayed a degree of fortitude and prowefs, which feldom occurs in the annals of history. Each person regardlefs of his fafety, and intent only upon annoying the enemy, the conflict was as bloody and desperate, as the time was critical and important. It had lasted for near six hours, and many of the brayest on both sides had fallen. At last, the affailants, perceiving the quick approach of the tide, and collecting and exerting at once their whole force, overpowered the belieged with their numbers, and burst forward irreliftibly within the walls of the fort; in which the garrison still continued to resist, till there was not a fingle person left to enjoy the glory of fo illustrious a defence. The royalists paid dear for their victory; above two hundred men, besides those who had fallen in the first affault, were killed upon the spot, and a much greater number wounded',

The fiege of Ziricfee.

THEY now proceeded to the siege of Ziricfee; and in this undertaking their difficulties were greatly augmented, and the fiege prolonged by a resolution of the inhabitants, who had broken down the dikes of the canal, and laid the adjacent country under water,

Meurfii Auriacus, p. 147.

meafure

measure, of which the States of Holland had BOOK lately fet the example during the fiege of Leyden, showed how firmly determined the citizens were to make a vigorous defence, and rendered impracticable all the ordinary methods of conducting fieges, by trenches, batteries, and affaults. Mondragone perceived, that the reduction of Ziricfee must be a work of confiderable time, and that the only expedient which he could employ, was to block it up on every fide, fo as to prevent the entrance of supplies. These it could receive only by the way of a finall canal dug from Ziricfee, to the great one above mentioned, which separates Schowen from the isle of Duyeland,

1575

In order to fecure the communication between these canals, the Zealanders had fortified the banks of the smaller, where it is joined to the greater; and while they retained poffession of the batteries which they had planted there, they secured a free entrance to the ships which were fent from Holland and Walcheren with supplies. To deprive them of this resource, and lock up the mouth of the small canal, was the first and principal object of Mondragone's attention. For this purpose he stationed his thips in those parts where the water was deepest; and formed in the most shallow parts, an estacade, a work of a prodigious labour, which committed employed

172

BOOR XIII.

1575.

employed his troops for several months, and was attended with considerable bloodshed. By perseverance, however, he brought it at dast to a conclusion; and then having drawn another stacado of the same kind, from an island which lay in the entrance of the canal, he joined the two stacados together by strong iron chains, and thus rendered all access impracticable.

which he could employ, was to block it up, on

During the progress of these operations, the protestants embraced every opportunity of introducing supplies into the city; and they were greatly savoured by the season, which was so much milder than usual, as to leave the river and canals navigable through the whole of winter. But in the beginning of February, the enemy's works were completed, and from that time, all attempts to relieve the besieged, by the way of the small canal, proved inessed, tual. Their friends were therefore obliged to turn to another quarter,

In the beginning of the fiege feveral cuts had been made in the dike of the great canal, on the fide of Schowen, in order, as was mentioned above, to overflow the country. Through one of these cuts, near the village of Dreischer, the prince of Orange proposed to convey supplies to Ziricsee across the inundation; and he committed

were feat from illo and

committed the execution of his defign to count BOOK Hohenloe, a German nobleman of the most unquestionable spirit and resolution; but a storm arising, and the Spaniards having encamped most of their forces, and planted batteries on the dike, close by the cut, they obliged Hohenloe to retire. The prince, not discouraged by this check, prepared to make a fecond attempt with a more powerful armament. And in order to animate his troops, he refolyed to conduct the enterprise himself.

HE reached Dreischer, and approached the The prince cut, at the time of high water. In the begin- attempts in ning of the attack he threw the enemy into confusion, made confiderable flaughter among them, and carried off some pieces of cannon from their batteries lo But the Spaniards rouzed by the danger which threatened them. quickly recovered their stations, and made a bold and vigorous resistance, till the tide began to retire; when the prince perceiving it to be impracticable to advance, was obliged, in order to fave his fleet from destruction, to return into the great canal. Boiffot the admiral, whose fhip was much larger than the rest, did not retreat in time, and his ship having struck against the bottom, he himself, and about three hundred of his crew, either perished in the waves, or were killed by the enemy. This was the

of Orange vain to re-

## HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

174 300K

2575.

the last accempt for the relief of the belieged; who being at length overpowered with their miseries, agreed to furrender the town into the hands of Mondragone; and that general, defirous to put a period to fo tedious an enterprise, granted them such savourable terms as they were willing to accept.

This fiege had lasted near nine months, and during all that time had occupied the greatest part of the Spanish army.

Death of Vitelli.

Bur before the furrender of Ziricfee, other events had happened, which rendered those that have been related of small importance to either party; and which, while they disappointed the hopes entertained by the Spaniards of completing the conquest of Zealand, in a great measure delivered the confederates from those disquieting apprehensions which the late success of the Spanish arms was calculated to excite. The first of these events was the death of Vitelli, who was, without controversy, the ablest, and most experienced general at that time in the Netherlands.

Death of Requesens.

VITELLI's death was quickly followed by that of Requesens. In carrying on the siege of Ziricsee, much greater sums had been necessary

Meteren, p. 155. Bentivoglio, p. 170.

than

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

175

1575.

than he was able to fupply. From Spain, he BOOK knew that, confidering the exhaufted condition of the king's finances', occasioned by his war with the Turks, no money could be expected; and the States of fuch of the provinces as retained their allegiance, were either unwilling, or unable to comply with his demands. Thus, great arrears were due to his troops, and they had already begun to mutiny, and to exercise the most intolerable oppression on the people; to whom he had been obliged to grant the liberty of wearing arms for their defence, from a wellgrounded apprehension, that if he had not permitted them to do this, they would have done it without his authority ".

REQUESENS had too much fensibility, and too little strength of mind, either to endure patiently the mortifications, or to encounter refolutely the difficulties, to which he was ex-His vexation and chagrin preyed inceffantly on his health and spirits, and at length brought on a fever, of which he died in a few days; leaving behind him a much higher character for civil, than for military accomplishments, in which he was confessedly much inferior to his predecessor the duke of Alva ..

Meteren, p. 156.

This liberty had been taken from them by the duke

W Thuanus, tom. iii. p. 464. Strada, tom. ii. p. 35.

o o a

than he was able redishipply: Front Spain, its knew that, condition of the single finances!, Secamoned the life were with the Tanks, no money could be expected; with the Tanks, no money could be expected; and the States of sich of the provinces as remained energy alternatives and, were enther convilings or unable to comply with his demands. Thus, great arrears were due to his troops, and they had already begun to muchy, and to exercise the mode intolerable or efficient of the replet to grant the liberty whom he had been policyed to grant the liberty of wearing arms for the despace, from a well-grounded their to do this, they would have done infitted their to do this, they would have done in without his authori

He had read to detect the feether it and to be first first fire gilts of state in a state partire of the first first first fire and the first fi

<sup>\*</sup> Madeen p. 7 co. Co.

to which the analysis of the last speed and state all the last seed and the last seed to th

A se if the sheet to be a strategy to the

HAR SHIP TO TROTHER

sent professor with vigory for place

# ISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

## PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

## BOOK XIV.

FTER the death of Requesens, who had BOOK 1 been prevented from nominating his fuccessor by the violence of his disease, the Thegoverncouncil of state assumed the reins of govern- ment in the ment; and as the king helitated for fome time council of in his choice of a governor, he found it neces fary to confirm their authority.

hands of the

This revolution afforded great fatisfaction to the people of Holland and Zealand; who flattered themselves with hopes, that now, when the administration was lodged in the hands of their fellow-citizens, the war would not be carried on with the fame animofity and ardor as

VOL. II.

before.

before. At first, however, the council entered heartily into the late governor's designs, and prosecuted, with vigour, the plan of operations which he had lest unfinished. And they continued to do so till their attention was called to objects of a still more interesting nature, than the reduction of the maritime provinces.

Mutiny of the Spanish troops.

THE Spanish cavalry had, as already mentioned, begun to mutiny before the death of Requesens. During the fiege of Ziricfee, the infantry remained obedient to their commanders, partly from being kept in perpetual employment, and partly from the hopes of enriching themselves by the plunder of that city; but being disappointed in these hopes by the articles of the capitulation, and large arrears being due, to the payment of which even the contributions of the people of Ziricsee were not applied', they flew to arms, deposed their officers, elected others, and a commander in chief from among themselves; and then, having fworn mutual fidelity over the facred hoft, they abandoned all their conquests which had cost them so much labour and blood, and passed over to Brabant; intending to take posses-

<sup>\*</sup> Meteren fays, that the Walloons laid hold of the money, and with great dexterity excluded the Spaniards from the town.

fion of some considerable fortified place, from BOOK whence they might make excursions, and plunder the neighbouring towns and villages.

THE council of state sent count Mansvelt to appeale them; but no offers or promises which the count was empowered to make, could divert them from their delign. They hoped, by the rapidity of their march, to have entered Bruffels by furprife; but both the inhabitants and garrison were prepared to oppose them. They failed likewise in an attempt on Mechlin. Then leaving Brabant, they turned fuddenly towards Allost in Flanders; and made themfelves mafters of that town, by climbing over the walls, in the middle of the night, when the citizens were off their guard. They could not have acquired possession of a place more fuitable to their defign; as it was fituated in the midst of a rich and fertile country, and lay at nearly an equal diftance from Bruffels. Ghent. and Antwerp. They had no fooner displayed the standard of rebellion in Allost, than they were joined by most of the other Spanish troops in the Low-Countries; after which, they began to exercise every species of violence and outrage, both against the citizens and the inhabitants of the country round.

3 0 0 K

THE prince of Orange remained not idle or unconcerned in this critical conjuncture. He had too much fagacity not to difcern, and too much zeal and dexterity not to avail himself of fo favourable an opportunity of advancing his By his letters, and emissaries, he endeavoured to rouse the spirit of the people, and to perfuade the council, " That now was the time when they might deliver themselves for ever from the tyranny of Spain. By the good providence of God, the government had fallen into their own hands. It ought to be their unalterable purpose, to hold fast the power which they poffeffed, and to employ it in delivering their fellow-citizens from that intolerable load of mifery under which they had fo long groaned. The measure of the calamities of the people, and of the iniquities of the Spaniards, was now full. There was nothing worse to be dreaded than they had already fuffered; and nothing to deter them from refolving either to expel their rapacious tyrants, or to perish in the glorious attempt."

They are declared rebels by the council. THESE exhortations, enforced by accounts which were propagated of the enormities committed by the Spanish troops, found an easy admittance into the minds of persons of all ranks. The council of state were no less in-

flamed

flamed than the people; and refolved to publish BOOK an edict, declaring the Spaniards to be rebels against the king. Barlaimont, Mansvelt, Viglius, even the Spanish officers of the highest rank, and Rhoda, president of the council of tumults, feemed at first inclined to concur with the other counsellors; but perceiving that their refentment was not confined to the mutineers. but extended likewise to all the friends of the Spanish government, they began to alleviate the outrages of the foldiers, and openly oppofed the publication of the edict; alleging, that troops which had mutinied on account of not receiving their pay, could not justly be confidered as rebels; and that the edict would ferve only to exasperate them still more against the people, while the council was not provided with force sufficient to restrain their excesses. But these reasons were held in great contempt by a majority of the council; who, having expelled the diffenting members, accused them of holding correspondence with the mutineers, and threw them into prison. Then having elected the duke d'Arschot for their president, in the room of Viglius, they published an edict in terms strongly calculated to increase the odium against the Spanish troops; calling on the people to concur with them in driving out that lawless and rapacious crew, who, under the pretext of procuring payment of their ar-

rears,

vented, bring utter ruin upon the Nether-lands.

Hostilities between the Spaniards and Flemings,

NOTHING could have been more confonant to the general spirit of the Flemings, than the fentiments contained in this edict. It ferved as fuel to that flame which was already kindled. and which now burst out with redoubled violence. To give greater weight to the meafures which had been already taken, and to those which they intended to pursue, the council called an affembly of the States; and all the provinces, Luxemburg excepted, fent de-This affembly had no foonerputies to attend. met than hostilities were begun. The citadels of Antwerp, Ghent, Valenciennes, and Utrecht were in the hands of the Spaniards. Romero commanded in Lieres; and Maestricht was garrifoned by fome companies of German in-To acquire possession of these important fortresses, and to prevent the Spanish troops from uniting themselves into one body, were the objects upon which the States bestowed their first and principal attention. They were fuccefsful in gaining over to their fide the regiments of Walloons in the Spanish service; and they raised so great a number of militia of the country, as, when joined with the Walloons, formed a confiderable body of troops.

THE

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

B Q Q K XIV.

THE Spaniards, on the other hand, prompted by Rhoda, and animated by the brave and active d'Avila, exerted themselves no less strenuously in counteracting their defigns. An officer of the name of Vargas, having drawn together eight hundred horse in the neighbourhood of Maestricht, had advanced as far as Visenach, in his way to Allost, in hopes of prevailing on the mutineers to act in concert with him. At Visenach he was met by two thoufand foot and fix hundred horse, which the States had fent to oppose him. But the Spaniards were not fo much inferior in number, as they were fuperior in military discipline. Vargas supplied his want of infantry by making a company of Burgundians quit their horses. The Flemish troops, though they began the attack with great impetuofity, fell foon into diforder; and the Spaniards broke in upon their ranks, and put them to flight, with considerable flaughter.

VARGAS continued his route to Allost; and was seconded, in his application to the mutineers, by d'Avila and Romero; but neither the importunity of their officers, nor a regard to the honour of their nation, or to their perfonal safety, could overcome their obstinate resolution to remain in Allost, till they should receive payment of their arrears. From Allost,

N 4

Vargas

BOOK XIV.

\$576.

Vargas led his troops, with the utmost expedition, to Maestricht, which, he was informed, the Germans in garrison there had agreed to deliver to the States. The execution of their defign had been retarded by some companies of Spaniards, a part of whom were in possession of one of the gates, and the rest stationed in the town of Vich. This town lies on the east side of the river, and is connected with Maestricht by a bridge over the Maese. Vargas, having transported his troops, and joined his countrymen at Vich, had a fharp engagement with the townsmen upon the bridge; but as they were not supported by the Germans, he foon compelled them to retire. They paid dear for this attempt to affert their liberty. The Germans, instead of acting as their friends, united with the Spaniards, and both together plundered the town without mercy .

The facking and plunder of Antwerp by the Spamiards. But the memory of the calamities which the people of Maestricht experienced on this occasion, was essaced by those which soon afterwards besel the citizens of Antwerp. The
States had laboured in vain to persuade the
Spanish garrison in the citadel to deliver it into
their hands. They now resolved to compel
them; and, with this view, they had brought

Meteren, p. 164. Bentivoglio, p. 178.

into the city a numerous body of Walloons and BOOK other troops. They had much reason for that folicitude with which they defired to get poffession of this important fortress; which, on the one fide, communicated with the town, by a spacious esplanade, and on the other, with the adjacent country. The States were not fufficiently aware of the danger to which, from these two circumstances united, the city of Antwerp was exposed. Champigny the governor had endeavoured to rouse their attention to this danger, and had earnestly exhorted them to block up the esplanade by batteries and trenches; and, at the same time, to order all the troops that could be spared, to encamp without the town, fo as to prevent the Spaniards at Alloft and other places from entering the citadel. But they wholly neglected the latter part of this advice, and they were too late in beginning to put the former in execution. They believed that the garrison would not venture to fally out upon the town, in which there was fo great a number of troops to oppose them; and they flattered themselves with the hopes of being able to compel them to furrender, before they could receive affiftance from their countrymen. For this purpose, two

ftrong

e He was brother to cardinal Granvelle, and was as averse from the Spanish interest as his brother was attached to it.

3576.

BOOK ftrong batteries were planted on the esplanade: while the townsmen were employed, either in pushing forward the trenches, or in raising mounds for the fecurity of the town.

> THE fiege of the castle of Ghent was carried on at the fame time, and the States had conceived the most fanguine expectations of fuccess; when the noise of the artillery reached from both places to the mutineers in Alloft; and, awakening in them fome sparks of their native warlike ferocity, produced a more powerful effect upon their minds, than all the exhortations and entreaties of their commanders.

NAVARESE, their leader, feized dexteroufly this opportunity which their present disposition afforded him; and, calling them together, exhorted them to reflect upon the folly of fuffering the fortresses besieged to fall into the hands of the Flemings. " That artillery," faid he, which is now thundering in our ears, is levelled against us, no less than against the garrisons of Ghent and Antwerp. When the Flemings shall have subdued the rest of our countrymen, can we doubt that they will next turn their arms against us, who are the principal objects of their refentment? Can you imagine that the States will then lend a more favourable

1576

dreadful

favourable ear, than at present, to your requests? Believe me, they will ere long extinguish the debt which they owe you, in your blood. Let us march instantly to the relief of the citadel of Antwerp. We shall soon oblige the enemy to raise the siege. We shall, in spite of the townsmen, and the raw troops which they have brought to their affistance, make ourselves masters of the richest city in the world, and take ample revenge for the unworthy treatment we have received."

He would have proceeded; but was prevented by shouts of applause, and exclamations from every quarter, to arms! to arms! They were now as impatient to leave Allost, as they had formerly been reluctant. On the third day of November, and only a few hours before funfet, they began their march; hoping to reach the citadel of Antwerp early next morning, unobserved by the enemy. Having found greater difficulty in passing the Scheld than they expected, they did not arrive till noon; notwithstanding which, being joined by four hundred horse, under Vargas and Romero, who had acted in concert with Navarefe, they entered the citadel, without meeting with the least opposition. The citizens were no sooner informed of their arrival, than they suspected their defign, and were filled with the most

dreadful apprehensions. Champigny the governor, whose advice had been so unfortunately disregarded, saw the approaching storm, and did every thing in his power to avert it.

Bur the impetuolity of the mutineers did not leave him time for completing the arrangements which he intended. These men, impelled at once by avarice and revenge, rejected with disdain the invitation given by d'Avila to repose and refresh themselves after their march. With rage and fury in their countenances, they demanded the fignal to advance; calling out, that they were determined, before night. either to perish in the conflict, or to fix their quarters in the city. They were in number between two and three thousand, and the garrison, together with the troops brought by Vargas and Romero, amounted nearly to the fame number. Navarese led on the mutineers. and the remainder were commanded by Romero. Nothing could exceed the intrepidity with which these two determined bands, vying with each other, attacked the trenches. citizens displayed, at the first onset, great bravery and resolution; but, being unable long to withstand the impetuous attack of the Spaniards, and being galled at the fame time by the artillery of the citadel, they at length gave way, and fled with precipitation along the

1576,

the two streets which lead from the parade into BOOK the centre of the city. The Spaniards were feconded by their cavalry; which bore down all before them, and followed close upon the rear of the vanquished, till they reached the great square, in the centre of which, stands the Guildhall or Palace. There the fugitives, being joined by some fresh troops, made a halt, and rallied; but they were foon broken a fecond time, and would have been all cut to pieces, if they had not taken shelter in the palace, and in houses of the square. From the windows they kept, for fome time, a brifk: fire upon the enemy, and did confiderable execution; but the Spaniards, who were accompanied by the retainers of their camp, fet fire to the houses, with hay, straw, and other combustible materials, not sparing even the palace itself; which was esteemed one of the richest and most magnificent in the world. It was quickly reduced to ashes; and of those who had taken refuge in it, some perished in the flames, and fome by the fword, in attempting to escape, while others frantic with despair flung themselves headlong from the windows.

THE Spaniards then dispersed themselves over the city; overpowering all opposition with

d Thuanus.

irrefistible

BOOK XIV.

irrelistible impetuolity. Had their number been fufficient either to murder, or to overtake the multitude that fled before them, the carnage of that memorable day would have been still more dreadful. Of the citizens near feven thousand perished; while the loss of the Spaniards amounted only to two hundred men. So great is the fuperiority in battle, of regular discipline, and prompt obedience to command. For though the citizens fought with extraordinary courage, like men whose all was at stake, they acted not in concert, and although they had been marshalled by Champigny, as well as the time would allow, yet, from want of practice, they were foon thrown into confusion; and, from the same cause, they were unable to recover their ranks, or return to the charge.

Justice would oblige us to bestow on the Spanish troops the praise due to the most heroic valour, if, besides the rapacity which impelled them, they had not disfigured the lustre of their victory by exercising a degree of barbarous cruelty, of which, at that period, the Spaniards alone, of all the nations in Europe, seem to have been capable. Antwerp, at the time of this catastrophy, was in the most flourishing condition. Companies of merchants from almost every commercial nation, resided

in it possessing storehouses and factories filled BOOK with the most precious commodities. Great numbers of the citizens too were the wealthiest in Europe. Their magnificent houses were adorned with the most costly furniture; and their shops and warehouses stored with gold and filver stuffs, and all other kinds of valuable effects, collected from every corner of the globe. Upon these the Spaniards seized, without any discrimination of the owners, and without confidering whether the persons whom they pillaged, were friends or enemies. The plunder that lay open and unconcealed was immense: but was far from being sufficient to satiate the avarice of the Spaniards. They exercifed the most unrelenting cruelty upon all whom they suspected to have concealed their treasures; and nothing was to be heard in the city, but either the shrieks and groans of the fufferers, or the lamentations of those whom they compelled to behold the torments of their husbands, wives, or children. Cotemporary historians have described some of the several fpecies of torture which they inflicted; but the reader's modesty would be offended, and his humanity shocked by the recital.

In this manner were these men, for three days and nights, employed in plundering and

d Thuanus and Meteren.

butchering by turns, a people who were subjects of the same prince as themselves, and from whom (whatever ground of complaint they might pretend against the council of State) they had never received the smallest injury, or provocation. Nor does it appear that their officers interposed to moderate their excesses, till the soldiers, exhausted with fatigue, were about to give over of themselves.

The money in specie which was extorted, amounted at least to eight millions of guilders, besides an immense quantity of gold and silver, in plate, stuffs, and surniture, which the owners were not able to redeem. The loss which the people of Antwerp sustained by the burning of so many buildings, was not less than what they suffered by the rapacity of the soldiers. The most beautiful part of the city was burnt to the ground; and great numbers of shops and warehouses, containing the richest goods, were consumed to ashes.

The States receive affiftance from the Prince of Orange. Whilst the barbarity exercised against the inhabitants of Antwerp, excited sentiments of compassion towards the unhappy sufferers, it greatly augmented that abhorrence which the

Flemings

Meteren, p. 164. Thuanus, tom. iii. p. 471. Bentivoglio, p. 178.

BOOK XIV. 1576.

Flemings already entertained towards the Spaniards, and made them more folicitous than ever to deliver themselves from a yoke which was now become intolerable. But the great fuperiority which the Spanish troops discovered on every occasion over the raw undisciplined forces of the States, created much anxiety, with regard to the fuccess of their endeavours. The council of state perceived the necessity of having recourse to foreign aid; and they willingly accepted an offer, which was made them at this juncture by the prince of Orange, of some cannon, ammunition, and troops, with which they pushed forward the siege of the citadel of Ghent, and foon obliged the garrison to capitulate.

This seasonable assistance contributed not a little to advance the prince's views. Immediately after the death of Requesens, he had projected a scheme of uniting all the provinces, and had exerted himfelf with great activity and address, in carrying it into execution. States entered readily into his ideas. Deputies were appointed, and invested with proper powers, by the feveral provinces; and in the The confecongress, which was held at Ghent, a treaty of Ghent confederacy was concluded, under which all the provinces, except Luxemburg, were com- November prehended.

8th, 1576.

VOL. II.

IN

In this confederacy, so well known in the history of the Netherlands by the name of the Pacification of Ghent, it was agreed between the Catholic provinces on the one hand, and those of Holland and Zealand, with the prince of Orange, on the other, that there should subfift between them an inviolable alliance, peace, and friendship; that all past injuries should be buried in oblivion; that all prisoners, and in particular the count de Bosfut, should be set at liberty without ranfom; that the contracting parties should, to the utmost of their power, affift each other in expelling the Spaniards from the Netherlands; that as foon as the provinces should be delivered from these bloody oppressors, and tranquillity established, a general affembly should be held of the States of all the provinces, for redreffing grievances, reforming abuses, and restoring the constitution to its primæval state; that the prince of Orange should remain high admiral and governor of the maritime provinces; and that he, and all others, whose property had been confiscated, should be reinstated in their possessions and dignities; that all the decrees of the duke of Alva, relative to the tumults and herefy, should be abolished; but that in the Catholic provinces, only the Roman catholic religion should be exercised; while in those of Holland and Zealand, all matters, whether civil or religious,

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

religious, should remain on their present foot- BOOK ing, till a general affembly of all the States should be held.

1576.

THE deputies who were now convened, whom Arrival of the historians call likewise by the name of the of Authria. States, entered immediately upon the execution of the articles of this confederacy, by transporting to the frontier of France such of the Spaniards as had been taken prisoners in the citadel of Ghent: and they had begun to make preparations to dislodge them from other places, when they were informed that Don John of Austria, whom Philip had made choice of for governor, had arrived in the province of Luxemburg. In some respects Don John was admirably qualified for this new station, to which his brother had appointed him. His affable and infinuating manners were fitted to conciliate the affections of the people whom he had been fent to govern; and his military accomplishments qualified him to pursue the war with vigour, against the revolted provinces. But in the critical fituation into which the late enormities of the Spaniards had brought the Netherlands, other talents besides these were requisite; such as prudence, patience, and felf-command, together with skill and dex-

Meteren, p. 169. Bentivoglio, l. 9. fub fine. nus, 1. 62. fect. 13.

196 .

B O O E XIV. terity in managing the passions, and the prejudices of men; qualifications which Don John possessed not in an eminent degree.

His pru-

His conduct upon his first arrival was ill calculated to allay those suspicions which the Flemings entertained of the king's defign in fending him to the Netherlands. ftopt at Luxemburg, he wrote letters to the council and the States, in which he informed them, that he would not come to Bruffels, the ufual residence of their governors, unless hostages were given him for their peaceable behaviour, a guard appointed for the fecurity of his person, and the same unlimited command of the fleet and army conferred upon him, which the preceding governors had enjoyed. He lamented the outrages which had been committed by the Spanish troops; and promised, that, if the States and people should maintain their obedience to the king, and their profession of the catholic faith, the injuries which they had fuftained, should not pass unpunished. But he added, that if they failed in either of these respects, they should, in that event, find him no less prepared for war, than he was inclined to peace ".

8 Meteren, p. 174.

.

i

C

to

tl

THE States and council were ignorant, till BOOK they received these letters of the light in which their late conduct was confidered by the court The States of Spain. They believed that, as the steps apply for adwhich they had taken were necessary for the Prince of prefervation of the people, it was impossible they could be offensive to the king; and they were extremely furprifed, thus to meet not only with diffrust, but even threats, and a defiance, where they were conscious of having merited approbation and applause. trembled therefore at the thoughts of putting themselves in the power of the new governor, and were greatly at a loss to determine what answer they should return to his demands. On this occasion, they had recourse to the prince of Orange for advice. And William readily embraced the opportunity, which was thus presented to him, of confirming his countrymen in those suspicions to which the governor's conduct had given rife.

" As it was but too manifest," he said, His advice. " from the strain of Don John's letter, that he ven ber intended to tread in the footsteps of his prede- 30th, 1596. ceffors, the States and council had much need to exert all their firmness, prudence, and circumfpection. They ought feriously to consider the important charge with which they were entrusted; and to remember, that, upon their present 0 3

present conduct, it depended, whether they, and their wives, and children, and fellowcitizens, should for the future enjoy those rights which belonged to them as natives of the Low Countries, or should be again exposed to the lawless tyranny of the Spaniards. They ought to exercise with vigour the power which they possessed, and resolutely reject all terms of agreement with the governor, by which the fundamental laws of the State might be brought into danger, or their own authority abridged. Enter not, faid he, into any accommodation with him, till the Spaniards, and all other foreign troops, be actually difmiffed. Trust not to any soothing promises which he may give you, of dismissing them at a more convenient feafon. Remember how the king himself, when he went to Spain, affured you, that the troops which he then left behind him, should, in three months afterwards, be withdrawn, and yet they were fuffered to remain for more than a year and a half; and would, notwithstanding your folicitations, have still remained, if the calamity which befel his army in Africa, had not made it necessary for him to remove them. Let no confideration perfuade you to liften to Don John's request of the unlimited command of your forces. By granting this, you will furnish him with weapons against yourselves. Nothing can express his distrust

more strongly, than his unprecedented requisitions of hostages, and a guard for the security of his person. If you comply with these demands, you will enable him to annihilate your authority, and to trample under foot your most facred rights and laws. It is impossible to believe that one who discovers so much solicitude to strip you of your power, can seriously intend your welfare. Is it not more reasonable that the governor should trust the States, than that the States should lay themselves at the mercy of the governor? Such demands were never made, even by your princes themselves; whose practice always was to come unarmed to your affemblies, and to take an oath to maintain your privileges, before they received from you any promise of obedience. Consent not to put yourselves under the power of John of Austria, upon easier terms than have been ever infifted upon with your native princes. quire him, previously to his admission, to interpose his authority for the immediate departure of the Spanish troops; and solemnly to engage to govern the State according to its fundamental laws h. To these conditions, your late fatal experience will justify you, if you add, that you shall have the power of affem-

h Here the prince mentions the particular privileges to which he alludes, and the times when they were obtained. Meteren, p. 175.

bling yourselves twice, or even thrice a year, if you shall judge it to be expedient; that the citadels shall be rased to the ground; that the right of appointing the governors and magistrates shall be vested in you; and that, without your confent, no military force shall be levied, and no garrifons stationed in the towns or forts. At present, it little imports you to consider whether or not this conduct will give offence to the king, for it is mere delufion, if you flatter yourselves that you have not already Promifes, foothing speeches, offended him. and professions of affection on his part, will not be wanting; but you will discover the last degree of weakness, if, after what you have experienced for feveral years past, you are not fenfible, that nothing now remains for you, but either miserably to bend under the yoke, from which you have fo happily escaped, or to employ with vigour and fortitude the means with which Providence has furnished you; and which, I doubt not, may yet prove effectual for your fecurity, provided you maintain harmony and concord among yourselves '."

The States apply for aid to forreign powers.

This letter, in some measure, produced the desired effect. It put to silence all those who were for receiving Don John on his own terms;

and

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Meteren, p. 175, 176. Bentivoglio, lib. ix. ab initio. Thuanus, l. lxii. sect. 15.

and the States, more suspicious than ever of book his design, resolved to insist upon the dismission of the troops, and the confirmation of the pacification of Ghent, as conditions, without which they would never agree to acknowledge his authority. And that they might not be found unprepared, in case of his resusal, they gave orders for making new levies; drew together an army at Wavre, between Brussels and Namur; and dispatched ambassadors to solicit assistance from foreign courts.

In Germany, where they were powerfully feconded in their applications by the prince of Orange, they engaged in their interests, John Casimire, count palatine of the Rhine. In France they did not confine their application to the Calvinists, but likewise prevailed upon the duke of Anjou, the king's brother, to espouse their cause, by setting before him the prospect of an establishment in the Low-Countries, more fuitable to his rank than he could expect to obtain in his brother's dominions. From the Queen of England, their envoy met with the most gracious reception. It was matter of the highest satisfaction to this sagacious princess, to see her inveterate enemy thus embroiled with his Flemish subjects; but, as she

was still desirous to avoid an open rupture with Philip, she chose to assist them with money

rather

rather than with troops, and gave them forty thousand pounds, with a promise of continuing her favour, on condition (which she added in order to save appearances) that they should adhere to the pacification of Ghent, and not throw off their allegiance to their legal sovereign.

Their negociation with Don John.

WHILE the States were making these preparations to vindicate their rights by force of arms, they fincerely defired to attain their end, by negociation with the governor. had too long groaned under the calamities of war, not to wish most earnestly for peace, provided that bleffing could be fecured, without making a facrifice of their liberties. Don John, on the other hand, discovered an extreme reluctance to comply with the conditions which they required of him; but he endeavoured to diffemble his fentiments, and attempted, by fair speeches, to cajole and de-Still, however, he continued to shew his diffidence, by infisting upon having a numerous guard for his person; and by refusing his confent to the departure of the Spaniards, unless the States should at the same time difinifs the foreign troops in their fervice, and give hostages, to remain in the hands of a neutral power, till their engagements should be fulfilled.

THE States, whose jealousy was kept alive by the repeated warnings of the prince of Orange, easily penetrated into Don John's defigns; and they refolved, if possible, to convince him, by one decifive ftep, that it was in vain for him to expect that they would ever depart from the terms proposed. In their asfembly at Bruffels, on the fifth of January. one thousand five hundred and seventy-seven, they drew up a new deed of union, in which they engaged in the most folemn manner, to maintain inviolably for ever the pacification of Ghent; to spare neither their goods, their perfons, nor their lives, in order to fulfillit; and to regard as perjured traitors, all those who, participating in the prefent union, should by word, deed, or counsel counteract it. A copy of this deed, subscribed by the governor and deputies of all the towns and provinces, by the nobility, prelates, and other dignified ecclefiaftics; and by the members of tribunals, councils, colleges, and chapters, together with a folemn ratification of it by the council, was fent by the States to Don John, as their final answer to his demands \*.

1576.

1577-

This measure contributed not a little to pro- Their amote the end proposed. It gave Don John with him.

k Meteren, p. 179.

a proof

BOOK 3577.

a proof of firmness on the part of the States. which he little expected, and shewed him the necessity of either agreeing to the conditions which they fo earnestly required, or of resolving instantly to have recourse to arms. Inflamed by ambition and the love of war, he would not have hefitated a moment what part to act. had not his instructions from the king required that he should avoid coming to an open rupture with the Catholic provinces. He confidered likewife, that the States had got the start of him, and were already well prepared to tepel force by force. Nor was he ignorant of the encouragement which they had received, to hope for fuccour from the neighbouring powers; or of the danger to which great numbers of the Spanish troops, furrounded by their enemies, were exposed, of being reduced by Influenced by these considerations. famine. and trufting that ere long, after quieting their fuspicions, opportunities would offer of depriving the States by degrees of that power of which they were at prefent fo tenacious, he entered into a negociation with their deputies at Marche en Famine, a city in Luxemburg; and after many obstructions and difficulties, concluded a treaty with them, which they Muchiath, fondly termed the perpetual edict.

In this treaty he engaged, that all the foreign troops in the service of Spain should leave the Netherlands, and never return thither without the confent of the States; that the Spaniards and Italians should depart within the space of forty days, and the Germans, immediately after receiving fatisfaction with regard to their arrears; and that all the cities and forts possessed by these troops should, as soon as they were relinquished, be delivered to the States, together with the stores of ammunition, arms, and provisions. He ratified the pacification of Ghent. He confented that all prifoners detained on account of the late disturbances, should immediately be set at liberty, except the count of Buren! And he promised that diligent inquiry should be made, concerning the outrages lately committed by the troops; that justice should be executed against the guilty, and a reasonable compensation made to the fufferers, either in the Netherlands, or in Spain, according as the king should be pleased to determine.

THE States, on the other hand, engaged to preferve inviolable their allegiance to the king; to maintain the profession of the Roman Catholic faith throughout all the provinces; to

<sup>1</sup> Son of the prince of Orange.

B O O K

receive Don John as governor general of the Netherlands; and immediately to furnish him with six hundred thousand storins, for the payment of the Italian and Spanish troops, in order to prevail on them the more easily to depart for Spain or Italy.

The States of Helland refuse to concur.

As foon as this treaty was concluded, ambaffadors were dispatched by the Catholic States, who alone were concerned in it, to the prince of Orange, and the States of Holland and Zealand, to defire their concurrence. It might eafily have been foreseen, that this application could not be attended with success. For although the maritime provinces had confented, in the pacification of Ghent, to fubmit the question of religion to the decision of a general affembly, to be held after the departure of the Spaniards; yet in that affembly they knew that they would have leifure to employ all their influence in behalf of their religion, and to offer fuch reasons against proscribing it, as they hoped would prove a fufficient counterpoise to the religious zeal of the popish States. this expectation it can hardly be supposed that protestants, whose sincerity in their profession was fo unquestionable, would ever have agreed to leave to others the determination of a matter in which they were fo deeply interested; and therefore it is not furprifing, that they declined acceding to the treaty now presented to Book them, in which this important point had, without obtaining their confent, been so hastily decided. But left they should alarm the bigotry of the catholic provinces, they took no notice in their answer, of this, which was their principal objection. They began with faying, that they could not enough praise that generous zeal which the States had displayed, in delivering their country from the tyranny of the Spaniards; and they rejoiced to find that they still perfifted in their resolution of adhering to the pacification of Ghent. But after confidering attentively the treaty which had been transmitted to them, they were forry to observe, that it was extremely ill calculated to answer the laudable intentions of the States. For befides feveral other objections of great weight, there was no proper provision made, in this treaty, for the regular calling of affemblies; in a convention, held on purpose to restore and secure their rights, an open infraction of them was ratified, by their confenting to the unjust detention of the count of Buren; the States had failed in the respect and gratitude which they owed to the queen of England and the duke of Anjou; and certain articles of the treaty were derogatory to the honour of the Netherlands; particularly that article, by which, instead of infifting upon a restitution of those invaluable effects,

effects, of which the Spaniards had plundered the inhabitants, they had promifed money to those men, notwithstanding their having been solemnly declared traitors and rebels by the States themselves, and by the council of State, when cloathed with the authority of the king.

Departure of the Italian and Spanish troops.

THE Catholics could not but be fenfible of the strength of these objections. Their impatience to be delivered from the Spanish troops, and their eager defire of peace, had betrayed them into that precipitation of which they had They could not avail themselves been guilty. now of the superior penetration of the prince of Orange. The treaty was already concluded, and nothing remained for them, but to watch the governor's motions with an attentive eye, till the troops were removed to fuch a diffance, that they could not eafily be recalled. Don John was at great pains to dispel their suspicions. For that purpose he employed all his influence to perfuade the Spaniards to depart; and he at length prevailed, though not till he had distributed among them the money which he had received from the States. This brave, but ferocious, and favage band then fet out upon their march for Italy, like an army in triumph; loaded with the spoils of their fellowsubjects, and without compunction for the rapacity

### PHILIP IL KING OF SPAIN.

rapacity and violence which they had exer- BOOK cifed ". in the state with the contract of the contract of

THEIR departure diffused universal joy Don John's throughout the Netherlands, and the people in- the governdulged the flattering hope, that the king having been at last touched with their calamities, had refolved to treat them with greater lenity and moderation than they had experienced fince the beginning of his reign. Their fatisfaction was heightened by the popular character of the governor, who was in the prime of life; elegant and graceful in his person and deportment; lively, facetious, and affable, and who gained exceedingly from the comparison which men naturally formed of his infinuating manners, with the referve and austerity of the king. He was received in Bruffels with fuch marks of respect as had never been shewn to any former governor; and persons of all ranks flattered themselves with the prospect of a just and mild administration.

THEY did not long enjoy this foothing pro- His impolifpect. Although Philip himself had ratified the perpetual edict, and Don John had, before his admission to the regency, fworn in the most folemn manner to observe it, it soon appeared

m Thuanus, lib. lxiv. fect. vi.

VOL. II.

that

that nothing was farther from the intentions of either. The limitations which that edict imposed upon the sovereign's authority, were utterly repugnant to Philip's temper, as well as to the plan which he had formed for the government of the Netherlands; nor would he ever have empowered his brother to make fo many concessions to the States, as the perpetual edict, or pacification of Ghent, contained, but in order more effectually to strip them afterwards of that very power which he now confented they should enjoy. But Don John was, from his natural impetuofity, incapable of executing this scheme, which required a much higher degree of circumfpection and experience, as well as patience and diffimulation, than he possessed. His court was perpetually filled with Spaniards, and other foreigners, who had rendered themfelves obnoxious to the natives; nor were any of the Flemings admitted into his confidence; but fuch as had shewn themselves devoted to the Spanish interest; while those who had discovered an attachment to the liberty of their country, were kept at a distance, and treated with indifference or contempt. This circumstance contributed not a little to revive that jealoufy of his defigns, which he had been fo folicitous to allay. But the States were still more alarmed, when he made them the following propofals: that they should not any longer with-

withhold from him the authority which his predecessors had enjoyed, but allow him to act as captain-general, as well as governor of the provinces: that they should empower him, without waiting for the determination of the general affembly of the States, to execute the two articles of the late treaty, which related to the obedience due to the king, and the re-establishment of the Catholic religion: and that, if the prince of Orange would not immediately agree to accede to the perpetual edict, the States should break off all correspondence with him, and reduce him and the maritime provinces to obedience, by force of arms. With these proposals the States refused to comply, but expressed their refusal in the softest terms, and without taking notice of his demand, to be allowed to act as captain-general, they represented to him that, by the pacification of Ghent, both he and they were bound to wait for the meeting of the general affembly of the States; to whose decision the prince of Orange, and the States of Holland and Zealand, had engaged to fubmit.

BOOK 1577.

Don John perceiving that he was not likely to perfuade them, grew more impatient than ever under his prefent restraints, and resolved now to employ either force or fraud, as opportunities should offer. The States could not Hie dupli-

P 2

thoroughly

B O O K XIV. thoroughly penetrate his defign, but they perceived how much he was diffatisfied with his fituation, and what difficulty they would find to obtain the performance of his engagements in the perpetual edict. This ferved to render them more than ever folicitous for the departure of the German troops, which, it had been agreed, should remain in the Netherlands, till they received payment of their arrears. These arrears amounted to a very great fum, which the States were utterly unable to raife at the present juncture. But, having raised a part of it, they made an offer of that to the Germans, and defired they would accept of goods and fecurity for the rest. In order to make a further trial of Don John's fincerity, they entreated him to employ his influence, to procure their confent. Don John readily agreed to this request; and declared that, if the Germans should refuse to comply, he would, at the hazard of his life, compel them. Having summoned their commanders to meet him at Mechlin, he went thither, as if on purpose to persuade them; but in reality, to inflame their minds against the States, and to exhort them to remain in the Netherlands, in the service of the king. Having had the fuccess which he defired with fome of the principal officers, and judging it necessary now to redouble his hypocrify with the States, he wrote to them, lamenting that

that a much greater furn was necessary to fatisfy BOOK the German troops, than could be procured in the Low Countries; and offering to fend his fecretary Escovedo to represent their situation to the king. This artifice was not altogether without effect. The States could not believe that Don John was capable of fo great deceit, as he was now practifing against them. They agreed to his proposal, and, as an expression of their gratitude, they fettled a pension of two thousand ducats on Escovedo, who set out immediately for Spain; but with a defign extremely different from that which was pretended.

Don John in the mean time carried on his He feizes on intrigues with the German officers, and hoped Namur. foon, by their means, to get possession of the fortified towns in which they lay. But before any of the plans which he had formed with this view were put in execution, he judged it necesfary to withdraw from Brussels, and, if possible, to make himself master of some place of strength near the frontier, where he might remain in fafety till he should find himself in a condition to take the field. Of all the frontier towns, Namur appeared the fittest for his purpose; being conveniently situated for the reception of the troops, to which he expected the king would foon give orders to return from Italy.

BOOK XIV.

Italy. It happened that Margaret de Valois, queen of Navarre, intended at this time to pass through Namur in her way to Spa. On pretence of paying his respects to Margaret, he left Bruffels, and arrived in Namur, with a great number of the nobility and others, who were favourable to his defign. But as the governor of the castle was a person of strict sidelity, Don John was obliged, in order to accomplish his aim, to have recourse to the following stratagem. Feigning to set out in the morning for the chace, he took his way by the eaftle; where having stopt, and inquired for the governor, he pretended a curiofity to fee the fortifications of the place. The governor, flattered with this vifit, and fuspecting nothing hostile from men who feemed equipped only for hunting, readily admitted, not only Don John himself, but his attendants; some of whom having arms concealed under their apparel, immediately feized upon the gate",

July 24th.

JOHN having thus fecured possession of the castle, the town was, by the assistance of count Barlaimont, governor of the province, soon subjected to his authority. He observed with triumph, that the day on which this event happened, was the first day of his regency. It

Bentivoglio, lib. x. p. 192. 195. Meteren, p. 185. might

might with greater propriety have been faid, that it was the first of those calamities which purfued him to the grave.

BOOK 1577.

AFTER fuch an open violation of his faith, there could be little room for any future negociation with the States. Yet, in a letter which he wrote to them on this occasion, he regretted that the plots which had been laid to deprive him of his life or liberty, had obliged him to have recourse to so hostile an expedient: and he affirmed, that he was still ready to observe the conditions of the perpetual edict; but declared, that he would not quit his present situation, till they should make provision for the fecurity of his person, against the machinations of his enemies.

THE States and council were greatly aftonish- The aftoed, when they received intelligence of this niftment of the States. They had wished for nothing so much as to preferve the provinces from being plunged afresh into the calamities of war. confidered that some of the principal cities in Brabant were in the hands of the Germans. They knew not what part these troops might act, if hostilities with the governor should take place; and they could not imagine that he would have ventured on so manifest a breach of the perpetual edict, without the prospect of fome PA

B O O K XIV. fome powerful support. They immediately dispatched ambassadors to remonstrate with him on the nature and consequences of his conduct, and to request him to return to Brussels. They promised to make the most serious inquiry into the machinations of which he complained, desired that he would name the persons guilty, and assured him, that nothing should be wanting on their part to provide, in the most satisfactory manner, for the security of his person.

Or the reality of these machinations he could produce no other evidence, but some anonymous letters, which, he said, had been transmitted to him. But as no person was named in these letters, and the authors of them were utterly unknown, all men believed them to be a forgery of his own, or of his courtiers, designed to serve as a pretext for his present treachery.

THE answer which he made to the States shewed clearly, that, in the steps which he had taken, he had been influenced by a motive very different from that which he pretended—That the States should put him in full possession of the authority, which the preceding governors had exercised; that they should give him the entire command of the army; break off all communi-

communication with the prince of Orange, and BOOL the provinces of Holland and Zealand, and compel them to accede to the perpetual edict: these were some of the conditions, to which if they did not agree, he acquainted them, that he was unalterably determined not to return. The States represented the inconfiftency between the former of these demands, and the perpetual edict; and reminded him of the utter impossibility, under which they found themfelves, of complying with the latter, without violating their faith, which, in the pacification of Ghent, they had pledged to the maritime provinces. He still persisted in his resolution; and the States were equally inflexible.

1577.

THEY were confirmed in their purpose, by Discovery of some letters writ by Don John and Escovedo to the king, and Antonio Perez, his fecretary, which were intercepted in Gascony by the king of Navarre, and fent by him to the prince of Orange, who transmitted them to the States. In these letters, the necessity of the speedy return of the Italian and Spanish troops was urged with the utmost earnestness and importunity. The diseases of the Netherlands, said Don John. admit of no other cure, but lopping off the parts affected: and, to the same purpose, Escovedo observed, That fire, and the shedding of blood, were the only means by which the diforders

B

B O O K XIV. diforders that prevailed could be remedied. For no man here, said he, whether among the nobility or people, performs the duty that he owes either to God or the king. Opinions the most abominable universally prevail; and every man lives as he lists, without law or rule. To which he added, That if the king did not send the necessary troops and money soon, he was afraid that Don John, who could not endure his present situation, would quit the Netherlands, and try his fortune elsewhere.

The States get a number of towns into their possession.

WHILE these letters served to alienate the Flemings more than ever from Don John, they raised to the greatest height their admiration of the penetration and fagacity of the prince of Orange, who had given them early warning of the governor's duplicity, and whose predictions were now fo remarkably fulfilled. They entered with greater ardor than ever into his views, and in conformity with his advice, they refolved to lose no more time in negociating, but without delay to put the provinces into a posture of defence, before the return of the Spanish forces. Whilst their levies, and other military preparations, were going on, they laboured with great folicitude to perfuade the Germans to deliver up the towns in their possession. Their fuccess was in some measure retarded by the governor's intrigues with the officers; but the

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

219 B O O K XIV.

the States, having at this time greater facility than Don John, in employing either money or force, according as the one or the other was most likely to prove effectual, had greater influence with the foldiers; who not only refused to listen to their officers, but put some of them under arrest, and gave them up to the States, together with the towns and citadels. In this manner the States recovered Bergen-op-zoom, Tolen, Breda, Bois-le-duc, and feveral other places; and they had the good fortune likewife to defeat a body of Germans, in the governor's interest, who were upon their march to surprise the citadel of Antwerp. After which, prompted partly by the apprehensions which this attempt, though unfuccefsful, had excited, and partly by the remembrance of the many calamities which the citadels, in other places as well as Antwerp, had occasioned to the inhabitants. they resolved to demolish these fortresses; and gave orders for this purpose, which were executed by the people with inexpressible alacrity o.

Don John, in the mean time, endeavoured to make himself master of some places in the neighbourhood of Namur; and he succeeded in his attempts upon Marienburg and Charlemont,

Meteren, p. 187. Bentivoglio, tom. ii p. 212.

B O O K XIV. But, being forfaken by the duke of Arschot, and almost all the other nobility who had attended him to Namur; and perceiving that the States were much farther advanced than himfelf in their military preparations, he fent them word that he had folicited the king for liberty to leave the Netherlands; and would immediately retire to Luxemburg, to wait the iffue of his application, provided the States would agree to defift from hostilities till the king's instructions should arrive. But the States, suspecting from their former experience that he intended nothing by this propofal but to render them more remiss in their preparations, replied, that before they would listen to any terms of accommodation, he must deliver up the city and castle of Namur. To this Don John refused to confent; and thus the negociation was broken off, and all hopes of terminating the dispute amicably were extinguished P.

The States invite the prince of Orange to zefide at Bruffels.

THE States, confidering war now as unavoidable, refolved to invite the prince of Orange to refide at Bruffels; and accordingly five of their number were appointed to carry him an invitation, couched in terms fo flattering and respectful, and so expressive at the same time of their gratitude for his former services, that it

P Bentivoglio, p. 198.

was impossible he could hesitate to comply with their request. Having obtained the confent of the States of Holland and Zealand, he went first to Breda, and thence to Antwerp and Bruffels. His reception in the places through which he paffed, was fuch as might be expected from a people, by whom he was held in the highest respect and veneration. Ardent to behold him, after an absence of several years, during which he had undergone fo many labours, and been exposed to fo many dangers in their fervice, they poured out in multitudes, to the distance of several miles, to meet him. In his passage from Antwerp to Brussels, one His recepfide of the canal was lined by the inhabitants of the former of these places, and the other, by those of the latter; while the banks resounded with the joyful shouts of a grateful people, who faluted him with the glorious appellations of the Father of his Country, and the Guardian of its Liberty and Laws. Nor were these demonstrations of joy confined to the vulgar, who are always fincere, but often precipitate and inconstant in their applauses; persons of all ranks vied with each other in testifying their respect and gratitude; and immediately after his arrival, the States of Brabant and the States-general concured in electing him governor of the province of Brabant 9; a dignity which had been

BOOK 1577-

9 Vide Hist. Metallique, tom. i. p. 235.

hitherto

## HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK XIV.

3577·

ons

hitherto bestowed only on the viceroys, or governors general of the Netherlands.

The promifing condition of the Netherlands,

By his wisdom and moderation, as well as by his vigilance and industry, William fulfilled the most fanguine expectations of his countrymen. But, notwithstanding his address and prudence, and skill in managing the minds of men; qualifications which he possessed in the most eminent degree; he could not preserve that unanimity among the Flemings, which it was of fo much confequence for them, in the present juncture, to maintain. At no period had they enjoyed fo fair a prospect of securing their liberty on a firm and permanent foundation. Besides the advantage of having a person of fo great experience and abilities to guide their counsels, the Spanish troops were entirely withdrawn; the king's finances were greatly exhausted with the wars in which he had been continually engaged; almost all the fortified places were in the hands of the States; and the people were animated univerfally with the most violent abhorrence of the Spanish government. But the States were prevented from improving the opportunity which this fortunate concurrence of circumstances afforded them, by a fpirit of division and animosity, which sprung up, partly from the jealousies of the nobility,

and

and partly from the intemperate religious zeal BOOK and bigotry of the people.

PHILIP de Croy duke of Arichot, the mar- Sources of quis of Havrée his brother, the count de La- and discord. lain, and feveral others of the catholic nobility, had, fince the death of Requesens, distinguished themselves as strenuous affertors of the liberties of their country. They had promoted with all their influence the pacification of Ghent, and had concurred with their countrymen in the invitation given to the prince of Orange to refide at Bruffels. But when they reflected upon the extraordinary marks of attachment which William had received, and faw him vested with an authority and dignity in Brabant, which only the fovereign or his viceroys had hitherto enjoyed; above all, when they contemplated his great abilities and experience in the conduct of affairs; they forefaw that they must content themselves with acting a fubordinate part in the government, and that the States would, in every branch of administration, be directed by the prince of Orange, who must therefore reap the glory of whatever should be atchieved, and, without the name of fovereign, exercise a supreme and sovereign authority. Stung with envy, and defirous to conceal the motive of their conduct, they began to affect an extreme anxiety at the danger to which

3577.

BOOK the catholic faith was exposed, by the States reposing such unreserved confidence in one who was an avowed friend of the new religion. this pretence, which never received any colour from the prince's conduct, they formed themfelves into a confederacy, with a defign to counteract him. And in order to give their party consistency, weight, and influence, they resolved to invite the archduke Matthias, brother of the emperor, to take upon him the government of the provinces.

The Flemish nobles give an invitation to Matthias.

This resolution they not only formed, but executed, without the knowledge or authority of the States, and they dispatched a messenger to Matthias with the greatest secrecy to intreat him to leave Vienna without delay.

Nothing could exceed the temerity of those who gave this invitation, but the imprudence of Matthias in accepting it. For besides, that he was called only by the least powerful of the two parties into which the Flemings were divided, he could not be ignorant how injurious and affronting his conduct must be thought by his kinfman the king of Spain. It is fome alleviation of his folly, that he was only twenty-two years of age; and that, confidering the numerous progeny which his father left behind him,

there

XIV. 15774

there was little probability of his obtaining any BOOK fettlement in Germany, fuitable to his rank. At the time of the death of Requesens, he had made an offer of his service to the States, and he accepted greedily of the present invitation. His enterprise being of fuch a nature that he durst not discover it to the emperor, he set out from Vienna in the middle of the night, with a small number of attendants. No sooner was his brother apprised of his design, than messengers were dispatched to bring him back, and letters fent to the princes whose States he must pass through, intreating them to stop him; but Matthias travelled faster than the messengers, and, in a few days, reached the town of Lierres in Brabant.

His arrival

THE States, aftonished at the news of his Heisadmitarrival, and highly incenfed against those who by the had invited him, complained loudly of the infult offered to their authority; and would have instantly formed the resolution of rejecting him, had they not been diffuaded from it by the prince of Orange. William forefaw the advantages which might arise from that rivalship, into which Matthias had entered with his kinfman Don John, and from the feeds of enmity which were thereby fown between the German and Spanish branches of the house of Austria. He reckoned it rather fortunate, that Don VOL. II. John

B O O K XIV, John had received so unpardonable an offence from the Catholic nobility; and he considered how satal to the general interest of the provinces all division must necessarily prove, in the present critical conjuncture of their affairs.

INFLUENCED by these considerations, he exhorted the States to overlook the injurious treatment which they had received, and perfuaded them to agree, not only to receive Matthias with all the respect due to his high rank, but even to elect him governor, on fuch conditions as they should judge proper to require. This conduct, the most prudent that could have been adopted in the present circumstances. furnished no fort of triumph to the duke d'Arschot, and the other Catholic nobility. On the contrary, it mortified them exceedingly, to observe that Matthias owed his election not to them, but to the prince of Orange; whose authority, which they intended to have controlled, was now confiderably augmented, and more firmly established than before.

Mortifications of the nobility. Soon after this, they received a still more fensible mortification. The duke d'Arschot having lately been appointed governor of Flanders, had gone to the city of Ghent, to take possession of his government. Not long after his arrival, a deputation of the inhabitants hav-

ing

ing urged him with much importunity to rein- BOOK ftate them in their ancient privileges, of which they had been deprived, in the time of Charles V. he was heard to declare, that that seditious multitude; which made fo much noise about their privileges, should ere long be punished as they deferved, notwithstanding their being supported by the prince of Orange. This faying being repeated by some who heard it, and circulated all over the city, inflamed the minds of the people with rage and indignation. They ran to arms, furrounded the governor's house, and threw him, and his friends and attendants, into prison. The prince of Orange, dreading the confequences of fo violent a procedure, and believing the duke to be now fufficiently humbled, interceded with the Ghentese, and procured his liberty; but no folicitations could induce them to release his adherents. In this manner was the duke d'Arschot's importance in the Netherlands almost annihilated. Matthias perceiving this, faw it to be his interest to connect himself with the party of which the prince of Orange was the head; and readily accepted the government, with a condition to which the States required his confent, that the prince should be his lieutenant-general in all the branches of administration.

1577.

Q 2

MATTHIAS

## HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK XIV.

1578.

ions

MATTHIAS made his joyful entry into Bruffels, in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and seventy-eight, when both he and the prince of Orange were admitted to their respective offices, after taking an oath to maintain the laws, and to regulate their conduct according to the instructions which should be given them by the States.

Application of the States to Philip.

Don John sent an ambassador to protest in his name against these proceedings. But the States had some weeks before this time declared him an enemy to the Netherlands, and paid no regard to his protestation. As they were perfuaded, however, that they had done nothing but what was authorifed by the fundamental laws of the constitution, they wrote an account of their proceedings to the king, declaring that they still held their allegiance to him inviolable; and praying, that he would confirm their election of his kinfman Matthias, as the most likely means of restoring tranquillity to the provinces. They had very little reason to expect that Philip would listen to this re-He looked upon their conduct in a light extremely different from that in which they themselves regarded it; and considered their prefumption in rejecting the governor whom

Meteren, p. 196. 202.

he had appointed, and still more that of nomi- BOOK nating another without his confent, as an act of the most audacious rebellion. The States were too well acquainted with his character, not to entertain fome apprehensions that such might be his fentiments; and therefore, while they omitted nothing in their power to assuage his resentment, they endeavoured to secure themfelves against the effects of it, by interesting the neighbouring powers in their behalf, and by establishing unanimity between the religious parties into which the provinces were divided.

In order to accomplish this last and most important object, a new treaty of union was concluded, in which, besides confirming the pacification of Ghent, the Catholics and Protestants promised mutually to support each other; and engaged, that they would join together in opposing all persecution, on account of religion, from whatever quarter it should come '.

THE neighbouring powers were not uncon- The empecerned spectators of these transactions. The emperor ' faw with much anxiety, that those flames which had burnt fo long in the Netherlands, were now likely to burst out with greater

Meteren, p. 197-

Rodolph II.

violence

ions

BOOK 1578.

violence than ever. But having been educated at the court of Madrid under Philip, with whom he wished to live on amicable terms, he had fhewn himself exceedingly displeased with the conduct of Matthias; had given Philip entire fatisfaction with regard to his own intentions; and had refolved to take no other part in the diffensions of the Netherlands, but that of employing his intercession and advice. did not however oppose the levies which the Count Palatine was making for the service of the States, either because he knew that his prohibition would not have been regarded, or because he desired to preserve a strict neutrality between the contending parties.

Henry III. of France,

HENRY III. of France was too much occupied in his own dominions, to have leifure to enter deeply into the affairs of the Netherlands. For many ages, France had feen no king, of whose reign the people entertained more fanguine expectations. Having, in his early youth, been appointed commander in chief by his brother Charles, he had given fignal proof of uncommon abilities. The French had flattered themselves with the hopes of seeing their kingdom restored by him to its ancient splendor; his fame was univerfally diffused, and the Polish nobility had, with general applause, conferred upon him their elective crown. when,

h

-

n

f

.

f

-

Q

f

-

y

y

of

-

F

17

e

-

it

1,

1578

when, upon his brother's death, he left Poland, BOOK and succeeded to the crown of France, it is inconceivable how great a change he feemed to have undergone. Irrefolute, inconstant, indolent, and voluptuous, with a mixture of the most ridiculous superstition, he lost the confidence of the Catholics as well as Protestants, whom he favoured and betrayed by turns. The unsteady and unskilful hand, with which he held the reins of government, added daily new force to the virulence of faction, till every member of the state, and almost every individual in the kingdom was infected. The Queen-mother employed all her art and influence to support his authority, but could not restrain her younger The States fon, the duke of Alençon, now duke of Anjou, to the duke from putting himfelf at the head, fometimes of one party, and fometimes of another, in oppofition to the king. To this prince, who was now the presumptive heir of the crown, the Flemings addreffed themselves, after having in vain applied to the king himfelf for protection. Anjou listened with much pleasure to their application; and having conceived hopes of obtaining the fovereignty of the provinces, he made them the most flattering promises of asfiftance. Henry, far from oppoling the duke's defigns, confidered his leaving France as the most fortunate event that could happen; fince he would be thereby delivered from a great number 24

of Anjou.

B O O K XIV. number of restless intriguing spirits, by whom the tranquillity of his kingdom had been disturbed. But as he declined on this occasion to assist his brother in levying forces, partly from inability, and partly from the dread of embroiling himself with Philip, Anjou was not in a condition, till some time after the present period, to sulfil his engagements.

They receive affiftance from Elizabeth.

THE Flemings mean-while received the most feafonable affiftance from the queen of England. Don John had, some months before, endeavoured to preposses Elizabeth in bis favour; by representing, that the disturbances in the Netherlands were entirely owing to the prince of Orange, and his adherents, who had broken the pacification of Ghent, and by their intrigues prevailed upon the States to violate the perpetual edict. Elizabeth pretended to give credit to this representation, and ordered her ambassador to reproach the States with their infidelity, and even to threaten them with her refentment, in case they should refuse to adhere to their engagements. Thus far this artful princess went, in order to perfuade Philip, that she seriously desired his subjects in the Netherlands to maintain their allegiance. But in reality she wished for nothing less. In a political light (that light in which the conduct of Elizabeth ought almost always

to be confidered) nothing could be more de- BOOK firable to her, than that the troubles of the Low Countries should continue; and, if either of the two contending parties should finally prevail, that victory should fall rather on the fide of the people, than of the king. But when the confidered the inequality of the difpute between him and the Flemings, she dreaded that the latter, if left to themselves, must foon be compelled, either to relinquish their pretensions, or to throw themselves for protection into the arms of France. She had therefore refolved to watch carefully over their conduct, and to afford them, from time to time, fuch affiftance as their circumstances should require. She lent a favourable ear to the defence which was made by the prince of Orange and the States against Don John's accusations; and she admitted of their justification the more willingly, as in the representation given her of Don John's conduct on this occafion, the found reason to believe that his intentions were no less hostile with regard to herfelf, than with respect to the States and the prince of Orange. For William had taken particular care to inform her of fome intercepted letters of Don John's, from which it appeared, that he entertained a fecret correspondence with the queen of Scots; that he had formed a plan, to which the pope was privy, for fetting that prin-

cess

BOOK XIV.

3578.

cess at liberty; and that he was incited to attempt this, not only by the desire of distressing Elizabeth, but likewise by the wild ambition of marrying the Scottish queen, and attaining, through her, possession of the British crowns.

AFTER this discovery, Elizabeth resolved no longer to keep any measures with Don John, but to exert herself with vigour in opposing his re-admission into the government of the Netherlands. With this intention she gave the most gracious reception to the marquis d'Havrée, the ambassador of the States, and entered readily into a treaty, by which she engaged to furnish them with an immediate supply, both of money and troops; upon condition, that the commander of these troops should be admitted into the council of state; and that, during the continuance of the war, no step should be taken, nor any alliance formed, without her consent."

ELIZABETH had no fooner fubscribed this treaty, than being still desirous to avoid an open breach with Philip, she dispatched an ambassador to Madrid, to represent to him, that in her late transaction with the States, it was far

anno 1577, &c. "Thomas Wilkes, clerk of the council.

from

157

from her intention to encourage them to with- 3 0 0 K draw their allegiance; that, on the contrary, the had employed the only means likely to prove effectual to prevent them from casting themselves in despair into the hands of some other power. She was deeply interested, she acknowledged, in faving her neighbours from oppression; especially the Flemings, with whom the commercial interests of her subjects had long been, and still were so closely connected. This she hoped would plead her excuse for exhorting him to fubftitute in the room of his brother a governor, in whom the people could repose greater trust and confidence; and with whom the herfelf could maintain a more friendly intercourse, than she could ever hold with Don John, after having discovered his design to invade her dominions. She concluded with intreating him to redrefs the grievances of his Flemish subjects; offering to mediate between him and them, if her mediation could be of use; and declaring, that if they should refuse to fulfil their late engagements, or attempt to make any innovation contrary to the pacification of Ghent, she would affift him in reducing them to obedience by force of arms x,

2 Carte, book xviii. Camden.

F

ELIZABETH

B O O R XIV.

ELIZABETH could not mean any thing by this embaffy, but the fulfilling of an empty ceremonial, which was received by Philip, and performed by her, with equal infincerity. She did not wait for a return to her embaffy, but proceeded inftantly to carry into execution her treaty with the States. Both the troops and money which she engaged to furnish, were immediately sent over; and the latter was remitted by the States to prince Casimire, to enable him to complete his levies.

Imprudent delays of the States,

THE States had collected a confiderable body of forces, which they stationed in the neighbourhood of Namur; and if they had followed the counsel of the prince of Orange, who exhorted them to lay siege to that important fortress, they might have made themselves masters of it, and prevented the return of the Spanish troops. But many among them being still unshaken in their allegiance to the king, as well as in their attachment to the popish faith; nothing but their remembrance of the cruelties of Alva, and the late enormities of the Spaniards, could have induced them to concur in the meafures which the majority had adopted. men fondly imagined, that Philip would be moved with their calamities, and perfuaded to comply with their requests. Being for this reason

reason unwilling to begin hostilities, they urged strongly the expediency of a defensive war: and thus the army was fuffered, for several months, to remain inactive, and time imprudently given for the arrival of the Italian and Spanish troops 7. 44 to levies of the anti-

ALTHOUGH Philip did not entirely approve The return of the Spaof his brother's conduct, and defired to have nift troops. obtained his ends by negociation and artifice; yet, having failed in this way, he refolved, without hesitation, to employ force; and he had accordingly fent orders to Alexander Farnese. the prince of Parma, to lead back the troops from Italy, to the Netherlands, without delay. On their arrival at Namur, being joined by other troops, which Don John had levied in the neighbouring provinces, they composed an army of fifteen thousand foot and two thousand horse; while that of the States amounted only to ten thousand foot and one thousand five hundred horse; and was no less inferior to the enemy in discipline, than in number. The States now faw their folly in having neglected to make themselves masters of Namur, as an entrance had thereby been fecured for the Spaniards into the centre of the Netherlands.

y Meteren, book viii. ab initio. e a colored about a color bros con cosq

in forces to be at pand. I in

BOOK XIV.

THE fituation in which Don John found himfelf at this time, was much more fuitable to the talents which he poffeffed, than those negociations and treaties in which he had been hitherto engaged. He had longed with extreme impatience for the arrival of the forces, and ardently defired to be revenged upon the States for the injurious treatment which he imagined he had received. Having got information that their army, commanded by the Sieur de Goignies, had left their camp in the neighbourhood of Namur, and were retiring towards Bruffels, he refolved to attack them on their march. With this intention he fent his cavalry before, under the prince of Parma, and followed them himfelf, as quickly as possible, with the foot. Farnese executed the trust committed to him with great valour. At the head of his battalion he attacked the Flemish cavalry with uncommon fury, and though they gave him a spirited reception, he soon compelled them to retire. In the mean time Don John came forward with a chosen body of infantry, and afforded him such a powerful support, as enabled him to drive the enemy's horse before him, till he entered along with them into the ranks of their main army. The Flemings believing the whole Spanish forces to be at hand, and being utterly unprepared for fo fudden an attack, were foon thrown into confusion and dispersed. About three

The battle of Gem-

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

three thousand were killed, and a great num- BOOM ber, with the commander in chief, were taken prisoners. The loss on the side of the con- January querors was inconfiderable.

AFTER this victory Don John reduced Gemblours, Louvain, Sichem, Nivelle, and feveral other places, both in Brabant and Hainault. He defired likewise to have laid siege to Brusfels; but his council of war were of opinion. that his strength was not adequate to so great an enterprise, and thought it more expedient to aim at easier conquests, till his army should be reinforced. The product and other alleged the

THE States in the mean time received an Amsterdam abundant compensation for their losses in the accedea to the confederate fouthern provinces, by the acquifition of February Amfterdam. To this wealthy city, which 8th. even then was the greatest in the northern provinces, the duke of Alva had, as mentioned above, given the most particular attention; having expelled the protestants, and put the government entirely into the hands of rigid ca-These men, supported by a numerous garrison, had baffled all the attempts which had been made by the States of Holland to reduce them. But being now hemmed in by their countrymen both by fea and land, and their trade almost ruined, they at tast consented

malignant delians, o

240

BOO

1578.

to accede to the pacification of Ghent, and agreed to disband the popish garrison, to recal the protestant exiles, and to allow them to hold their religious affemblies without the city. It was not long before they repented of these concessions. The protestants being inflamed with zeal for their religion; impatient under the restraints which in the late agreement had been laid upon them, fired with refentment for former injuries, and suspicious that the Catholics were again meditating schemes for their expulfion, they flew to arms, and having suppressed the exercise of the popish faith, they drove all the priefts, and others whom they suspected of malignant deligns, out of the city 2.

Phillip's anfwer to the States.

In the midst of these transactions John de Noircarmes, Baron de Selles, arrived from Spain, with Philip's answer to the application which the States had made to him fome months before. It was fuch as they had reason to expect, and contained an absolute denial of their requests, with regard to the removal of Don John, and the ratification of the election of Matthias.

The States profecute the war.

Convinced by this denial, of the folly of those hopes which they had entertained, that

\* Van Meteren, p. 207.

the

Daniel Hiller and Transfer

the king would yield to their intreaties, and fensible that they had suffered considerable loss, from that want of dispatch and secrecy which is incident to the procedure of a numerous affembly; they enlarged the powers of Matthias and the prince of Orange, and invested them, and the council of state, with authority to conduct the operations of the war, without having recourse on every occasion to the affembly of the States.

BOOK

No time after this was unnecessarily loft. The troops which had been dispersed at Gemblours were collected, and of these, and the new levies, an army was composed, amounting to eight thousand foot and two thousand horse, partly Flemings, and partly Scots and This army was stationed in the English. neighbourhood of Lierres, in the centre of Brabant, under the command of the count de Boffut. Don John's army, after he had put garrifons into the towns which he had taken, was still superior in number; and therefore he resolved to march towards Bossut, before the auxiliaries, which the States expected from France and Germany, should arrive. But he foon found that he had now to contend both with troops and a general much fuperior to those whom he had encountered at Gemblours. Boffut, Battle of from a sense of the inferiority of his forces, had VOL. II. R pitched

BOOK XIV. pitched his camp near the village of Rimenant,

in a fituation extremely advantageous for preventing the enemy from penetrating further into the provinces. On the one fide it was defended by the Demer, and on the other, by a wood; and was fortified both before and behind with strong entrenchments. Notwithstanding this, Don John resolved to attack it, unless he could provoke the count to quit his lines, and give him battle. The prince of Parma, who from his early youth was no less wife than brave, remonstrated against this resolution, as being dangerous and desperate. But Don John, being confirmed in his purpose by the other officers, gave orders for his army to advance, after having fent before a felect body of troops, to attack an important post, without the camp, which was guarded by fome English and Scotch forces, under colonel Norris, Among the affailants was Don Alphonfo Martinez de Leyva, at the head of a company of two hundred men, whom he maintained at his own expence, and who were all either gentlemen, or foldiers who had diffinguished themselves in former wars. These men attacked the British troops with uncommon fury. After a short resistance, the latter began to retreat, but in good order, and

with their faces turned towards the enemy. The Spaniards, to fecond whom Don John had fent feveral battalions of fresh troops, not

fuspecting

M V S É V M BRITANNICUM

The prince of Parma,

BOOK XIV. 1578.

ards repulf-English;

fuspecting any artifice, and believing the enemy to be intimidated, followed them with much precipitation, till they had passed a narrow defile within reach of the artillery of the Flemish camp. Norris then returned to the The Spanicharge, and the combat was renewed with ed by the greater fury than ever. He was reinforced with troops fent him from the camp, and both parties, being nearly equal, feemed determined to die or conquer. This gallant Englishman animated his army by his own example, and had three horses killed under him. The Scots, impatient of the heat, fought in their August 18. shirts, and astonished the enemy with the singularity of their appearance. In the mean time. a body of troops, which had been placed in ambush, attacked the Spaniards in flank, and Boffut continued to fire upon them inceffantly with his artillery. They must all have perished, had not the prince of Parma obtained liberty from Don John to advance at the head of the cavalry to their relief. By his superior prudence, he would have prevented this inconsiderate enterprise; and now, by his prudence and bravery united, he faved the troops from those fatal consequences, to which, through their own and the general's confidence, they had been exposed. About nine hundred men, however, fell on the field of battle,

R 2

BOOK and a confiderable number were taken pri-

Don John, having thus failed in his attempt, and being fensible that he could not, with his present army, keep the field against the numerous forces that were ready to pour in upon him from France and Germany, retreated, with the resolution of acting for the future on the defensive only, and pitched his camp under the fortifications of Namur.

Treaty of the States with Anjou. THE States concluded about this time their treaty with the duke of Anjou, which confifted of the following articles:—That, under the title of protector of the Netherlands, the duke should furnish, at his own expence, ten thousand foot and two thousand horse: that all the conquests which he should make on the Flanders side of the Maese, should belong to the States; and those on the other side to himsels: that, for the accommodation of his troops, Landrecy, and Quesnoy in Hainault, and Bapaume in Artois, should be put in his possession: that the States should not enter into any agreement with Don John, without the duke's confent; and that, in case they should

hereafter

Bentivoglio, book x. Strabo, l. iii. Meteren, p. 225. Thuanus, lib. lxvi. fect. xii.

hereafter think proper to elect another fovereign, they should make choice of the duke; but that in the mean time the government should remain entire in the hands of the States.

BOOK XIV. 1578.

AGREEABLY to the first article of this treaty, Defigne of Anjou had affembled a confiderable body of troops in the neighbourhood of Mons, to which place the States fent a folemn embaffy to intreat that he would quicken his march into the interior provinces. They intended, that their own army should unite with his, and that of Casimire, and that all the three armies should act in concert with one another, in expelling Don John, before he should receive a reinforcement from Spain or Italy. Nor was it without apparent reason that they entertained the hopes of accomplishing this design. Prince Casimire had passed the Rhine and the Maese. and advanced as far as the town of Diest, in Brabant. His army, when joined with that of Their nuthe States, amounted nearly to forty thousand army. foot and twenty thousand horse, and was greatly fuperior to any which Don John could muster to oppose it,

But a variety of causes concurred in render- 1 s overaing almost useless these mighty preparations; ed ineffecand a fpirit of division arose, by which the tual. people in the more fertile provinces loft for

B O O R XIV.

ever that liberty, for which they had fo strenuoully contended, at the very time when it was most in their power to secure it on a firm and permanent foundation. For although, according to the testimony of the catholic, as well as the protestant historians, nothing could exceed the prudence and moderation with which the prince of Orange conducted the affairs of government, it foon appeared, that no human wisdom was sufficient to preserve harmony and concord, where there were fo many grounds of jealoufy and discontent. Of this discontent and jealoufy, religious bigotry was the principal, but not the only cause. Ambition and interest joined their influence to that of religion, and not only divided the people themfelves into factions, the most inveterate and hostile, but created suspicion and discord, between them and the foreign powers which they had called to their affiftance. The bas and the bas

The queen of England had heard, with great uneasiness, of the late treaty between the States and the duke of Anjou. She knew not, at this time, how far Henry was concerned in his brother's enterprise, nor what schemes of conquest these two princes might have formed. She considered what great advantages their neighbourhood afforded them for the execution of these schemes; and foresaw the prejudice which

which might accrue to the English nation, if BOOK the Netherlands were to fall under subjection to the crown of France. In order to prevent this, and counterbalance the power and influence of Anjou, she had made such ample remittances of money to prince Casimire, as had enabled him to augment the number of his army, which confifted wholly of protestants, confiderably above what the States had either expected or defired. This alarmed the jealoufy of all the catholics in the Low Countries, who dreaded the approach of fo great an army of reformers, and fuspected that Casimire, in concert with Elizabeth, had conceived the defign of extirpating the popish faith. They did not conceal their apprehensions. Even the prince of Orange, and other moderate protestants, joined in remonstrating with Casimire, on the necessity of his dismissing a part of his forces. But this remonstrance served only to alienate him from the prince of Orange and the council, and to render him less attentive to their instructions with regard to the conduct of the war. He was likewise highly offended with the preference which the States had given to the count of Boffut, by appointing him commander in chief of the army; and he made them feel his refentment, by the flowness of all his military operations, and his continual demands of supplies for the payment of his troops b.

b Reidanus, p. 25, 26.

BOOK XIV. 1578. Intemperate seal and ambition of the proteftants,

But the intemperate zeal and ambition of the protestants were productive of still more pernicious effects. Not fatisfied with the fecurity from persecution which they had enjoyed fince the pacification of Ghent, they took courage from the great number of protestants in the army, and petitioned Matthias and the States, to be allowed to hold their religious affemblies openly in churches, and to be admitted, on the same footing with the catholics, to the feveral offices of government. They ought certainly to have remained filent, as they had done hitherto, till the common enemy had been expelled, and the public tranquillity established. Yet their conduct admits of some apology: their party had greater influence now than it was likely to possess, if the catholics were delivered from their dread of the Spaniards, and they could not foresee those fatal confequences with which their application was afterwards attended.

But whatever judgment may be formed of their discretion, the States thought it necessary, lest the army should have proved refractory, to comply with their requests. The pacification of Ghent required that religion should remain on the same footing on which it stood at the time of that treaty, till the States of all the provinces should be assembled; yet the States, now partially assembled, consented, not only

that the protestants should have access to all BOOK public offices, but likewise that they should have churches allowed to them in every place where a hundred families refided; upon this condition, that in Holland and Zealand the fame indulgence should be granted to the catholic inhabitants. To this decree they gave the name of the Peace of Religion; and each of the provinces was left at liberty to accept or reject it, as they should judge expedient.

1578.

In some cities it proved a falutary remedy The unhapfor the diforders with which they were diffract- quences, ed; but, in many others, it added malignity to that poilon, which raged in the minds of the more violent religionists, and was the source of the most pernicious animosity and discord. It gave no contentment to the zealots of either party, but contributed to inflame them more than ever against each other, by adding fresh materials to that inveterate jealoufy and rancour which their bigotry inspired, but which had been laid afleep for some time past, by their apprehensions of the common danger. The catholics every where, but in a few cities of Flanders and Brabant, opposed the execution of this decree; and the reformers derived little advantage from it, except in those places where they overpowered their antagonists by fuperior numbers. In the provinces of Artois and

B O O R XIV.

and Hainault, where the Reformation had never made any confiderable progress, the people rejected the decree with the most determined obstinacy, and resused to allow the exercise of any other religion but the catholic within their territories; while the people of Ghent and other places, in which the majority were protestants, actuated by the same intolerant and bigotted spirit, expelled the popula ecclessiastics, seized their effects, and spoiled the churches of their ornaments.

The last the control of the second of the second of the second

Difcord between the Walloons and Flamines.

Between the people of Ghent and the Walloons a particular ground of enmity had fublisted, ever since the former had cast the duke d'Arschot and his attendants into prison. For most of these were persons of rank in the Walloon provinces; and the Ghentese had not only rejected every folicitation in their behalf, but had even treated them with feverity during their confinement. The Walloons were, for this reason, the more readily incensed by the accounts which they received of the late enormities committed against the catholics, which they justly regarded as a violation, on the part of the protestants, of their late engagements. Forgetful therefore of the danger which threatened them, and liftening only to the voice of

b The natives of Artois, Hainault, and the other fouthern provinces.

indignation

indignation and referenment, they began to fe- # 0 0 R parate themselves from the other provinces, and refused to contribute their share of the money necessary for the payment of the troops. we took arms," faid they, " to vindicate

our liberty; but what will it avail us to be

delivered from the Spanish yoke, if we must " fubmit to a voke no lefs galfing and intole-

rable, imposed upon us by our countrymen;

" who, under the pretext of zeal against the tyranny of the Spaniards, flew now that

" their only defign has been to tyrannize over " us themselves?" The other provinces repre-

fented to them the mifchievous confequences with which their conduct must be attended. and accompanied their representations with prayers and threats; but the Walloons remained inflexible, and foon afterwards they gave a striking proof of their hostile disposition, by refuling to deliver the towns of Landrecy, Quefnois, and Bapaume, to the duke of Anjou, in

fatisfied with this, they began to prepare openly for war, and employed the contributions, which had been raifed for paying the army of the States, in levying forces against the Flemings. The Flemings quickly armed themselves

conformity to the treaty above recorded. Not

in their defence, and feveral rencounters happened between the Walloons and them, that

were equally pernicious to both.

PRINCE

B O O K XIV.

and Hainault, where the Reformation had never made any confiderable progress, the people rejected the decree with the most determined obstinacy, and refused to allow the exercise of any other religion but the catholic within their territories; while the people of Ghent and other places, in which the majority were protestants, actuated by the same intolerant and bigotted spirit, expelled the popula ecclesiastics, seized their effects, and spoiled the churches of their ornaments.

Difcord between the Walloons and Flemings.

man hi you manage with water 1 Between the people of Ghent and the Walloons' a particular ground of enmity had fublisted, ever since the former had cast the duke d'Arschot and his attendants into prison. For most of these were persons of rank in the Walloon provinces; and the Ghentese had not only rejected every folicitation in their behalf, but had even treated them with feverity during their confinement. The Walloons were, for this reason, the more readily incensed by the accounts which they received of the late enormities committed against the catholics, which they juftly regarded as a violation, on the part of the protestants, of their late engagements. Forgetful therefore of the danger which threatened them, and liftening only to the voice of

indignation

b The natives of Artois, Hainault, and the other fouthern provinces.

indignation and referement, they began to fe- BOOR parate themselves from the other provinces, and refused to contribute their share of the money necessary for the payment of the troops. We took arms," faid they, " to vindicate our liberty; but what will it avail us to be delivered from the Spanish yoke, if we must fubmit to a voke no lefs galling and intolerable, imposed upon us by our countrymen; " who, under the pretext of zeal against the tyranny of the Spaniards, flew now that their only defign has been to tyrannize over " us themselves?" The other provinces reprefented to them the mifchievous confequences with which their conduct must be attended, and accompanied their representations with prayers and threats; but the Walloons remained inflexible, and foon afterwards they gave a Itriking proof of their hostile disposition, by refuling to deliver the towns of Landrecy, Quefnois, and Bapaume, to the duke of Anjou, in conformity to the treaty above recorded. Not fatisfied with this, they began to prepare openly for war, and employed the contributions, which had been raifed for paying the army of the States, in levying forces against the Flemings. The Flemings quickly armed themselves in their defence, and feveral rencounters happened between the Walloons and them, that were equally pernicious to both.

PRINCE

252

BOOK XIV.

1578. The effects of that difcord.

PRINCE Casimire's troops and those of the States had been for some time past united, and Don John was not possessed of a force sufficient to oppose them; but the factious and refractory spirit of the Walloons and Flemings had diffused itself into almost every part of the Netherlands, except the provinces of Holland and Zealand. Many cities withheld their contributions, and the army was extremely ill provided with every thing necessary to render the operations of the campaign ineffectual. Boffut's principal object was to compel the enemy to a general engagement; and for this purpose, after taking two or three towns of little confequence, he led his troops within view of the camp in which Don John had entrenched himfelf, under the fortifications of Namur. With an army fo much superior in number to the enemy, the count might have forced the entrenchments; but being neither furnished with pioneers, cannon, or a fufficient quantity of ammunition, and finding Don John unalterably determined to keep within his camp, he was obliged to retire. His troops, in the mean time, were highly discontented, on account of their want of pay. His discipline was unavoidably relaxed. The country was oppressed and plundered. Casimire accepted of an invitation from the Ghentese, to affist them with a part of his forces against the/Walloons. It became dangerous

dangerous to keep the remainder of the army any longer in the neighbourhood of the Spanish camp, and it was soon afterwards found impracticable to support it. A part of the troops therefore was disbanded, and the rest were put into garrison in the fortisted towns.

8 0 0 K XIV.

THE duke of Anjou's army was not better provided with the means of fublistence than that of the States, and its operations were equally. infignificant. Conscious of his inability to fulfil his engagement, Anjou grasped at those pretexts for eluding them, which the conduct of Casimire, and that of the Walloons, afforded him. He complained bitterly of the treatment which he received from the latter, who not only refused him admittance into the towns which the States had promifed for the accommodation of his troops, but shewed themselves no less unwilling to furnish him with provisions, than if he had come to invade, and not to protect and defend them. He seems likewise to have fuspected, and not without some reason, that Casimire had formed some private designs, inconfiftent with that establishment which he himfelf had in view in the fouthern provinces; and that he had carried his troops to the affiftance of the people of Ghent, in order to pave the way for executing those designs. He therefore refused to join his army with that of Bossut, unless

BOOK XIV. unless Casimire should return to it; and when Matthias and the prince of Orange failed in their endeavours to prevail on Casimire (to whom the Ghentese had advanced a considerable sum of money, to induce him to remain with them), Anjou broke up his camp, and suffered a part of his army to go over to the Baron de Montigny, who was commander in chief at that time of the forces of the Walloons.

Conclusion of the campaign,

Such was the conclusion of this campaign, and such the issue of all the mighty preparations which the States had made for a vigorous prosecution of the war. The people themselves, instead of uniting their efforts against the common enemy, wage war with one another, in violation of the most solemn engagements, into which they had entered only a few months before; and the princes, who had undertaken to deliver the Flemings from the Spanish yoke, inlist themselves, in opposition to each other, under the banners of those inveterate sactions, which threaten this unhappy people with destruction.

CASIMIRE went over to England to justify his conduct to Elizabeth, and Anjou sent an ambassador to the States to make an apology

CONTROL I COM UNE A CO I DECISE SALE W

Meteren, p. 233. Grotius, p. 60.

for his, by representing, that his troops had BOOR joined those of Montigny without his consent; but that the States had no reason to dread the confequences of that step, since the Ghentese would be thereby more easily restrained from their excesses. The States, thinking it prudent to diffemble their refentment, admitted of his apology; and, that they might still remain on friendly terms with him, they affured his ambaffadors, that they had a just sense of gratitude for the efforts which the duke had made in their behalf; that, as foon as possible, they would refund his expences; and that, if they should ever find it necessary to elect another prince, in the place of the king of Spain, they would make him an offer of the fovereignty: who since the thomeson a notificity the art charter is a second

DURING the course of the transactions that Death of have been related, Don John had kept his of Austria. troops within their camp at Namur. might now have left it without danger; but Don John had been seized, some weeks before, with a violent illness, which cut him off before he had reached the thirtieth year of his age. His death was by some ascribed to poison; but, according to others, it was owing partly to difeafe, and partly to that chagrin which he conceived from the negligence with which his repeated applications for money and troops were treated

1578. October.

BOOK treated by the Spanish ministers. Fond to excess of military glory, and conscious of talents which would probably have enfured fuccefs, he lamented bitterly the necessity which the weakness of his army imposed upon him, of remaining fo long inactive, and folicited his brother for a reinforcement with the most earnest importunity. Nor was it only because Philip was averse to a vigorous prosecution of the war, that he deferred complying with his request. After that renown, which Don John acquired in the battle of Lepanto, his conduct, as above related, contained fo clear a discovery of his views, as could not but alarm the fuspicious temper of the king, who thenceforth kept a watchful eye upon all his brother's most fecret motions; and when he fent him to the Netherlands, resolved never to intrust him with fuch a numerous army as might enable him to execute any ambitious design. Philip's fuspicions, during his brother's residence in the Low-Countries, were kept perpetually awake, by reports of his having formed a defign of marrying the queen of Scots. these reports Philip gave credit, perhaps too eafily. By bis orders, Don John's fecretary Escovedo, who had fomented his master's ambition, was privately put to death. It was believed by many, that he iffued the like orders with regard to his brother, and that this young

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

1578.

young heroic prince died of poison, given BOOK him by certain popish ecclesiastics, instigated by the court of Spain. But whatever ground there was for this perfuasion, there is little room to doubt that, from jealoufy of his brother, more than any other cause, Philip withheld the fupplies necessary for carrying on the war. And to this circumstance the troops of the States were indebted for their preservation from that ruin, to which their divisions had exposed them d.

d Meteren, p. 234. Grotius, &c.

Vol. II. desels of fund violating as we distribute vol. II.

he lagged to his brother, and that this

hele report Philip gave credit spennips ton of the orders, Don Tohu's fore-tree Provide, who had forme and but smallery

the Counties was him land by reports of his land

# THE WIND OF THE WALL

able) had as A

ANT HE WALL

### HISTOR

OF THE REIGN OF

## PHILIP THE SECOND, KING OF SPAIN.

#### BOOK XV.

ON JOHN having on his death-bed ap- BOOK. pointed the prince of Parma to succeed him, his choice was foon afterwards approved, The prince and ratified by the king.

This young prince had on many occasions, His characfince his arrival in the Netherlands, given proof of confummate prudence, and the most intrepid valour. Temperate, vigilant, and indefatigable, he could descend to the most minute detail in all military operations, and was always the first to expose himself to toil and danger, and the last to retire. Pliant in his manners, and infinuating in his address; he could

B O O K XV. could speak most of the European languages, and accommodate himself to the soldiers of all the different nations of which the army was composed. He possessed a vigour of bodily constitution equal to that of his mind, joined with an elevated martial air and aspect, which served, in time of battle, to fill the enemy with terror, and to inspire his own troops with courage and considence of success.

HE had no fooner performed the last offices of his friend and kinfman, than he applied himself assiduously to fulfil the duties of that important station to which he was now ad-While the army of the States remained in the field, he was obliged, through the fmallness of his numbers, to follow the same plan which his predecessor had pursued, and to keep his little army strongly fortified within their camp; but when, from the causes above explained, not only the army of the States, but likewise the Germans and French under Casimire and Anjou, were all either difbanded, or put into winter-quarters, Farnese, considering this as the proper feafon for action, refolved to undertake the fiege of fome important place, by the acquisition of which he might increase his refources for carrying on the war.

HE hesitated for some time, whether he BOOK should enter first upon the siege of Maestricht, or that of Antwerp. The benefit which he would have derived from the possession of the latter of these places, was greater than any which could arise from that of the former; as Antwerp was the principal feat of wealth and commerce in the Netherlands, and was fituated in the most advantageous manner for prosecuting the conquest of the maritime provinces; but having weighed attentively the difficulties to be furmounted in the fiege of a place of fo great extent and strength as Antwerp, he wisely refolved to begin with the fiege of Maestricht, in which he could engage with fewer forces, and a greater probability of fuccess \*.

In order to conceal his design from the States, he directed his march towards Antwerp, and had a sharp rencounter with a body of French and British forces, which were sent out to obstruct his approach. These he forced to retire under the fortisications of the city; immediately after which he turned back suddenly, and invested Maestricht, before the States had time to furnish that town with the necessary supplies of stores and provisions.

a Bentivoglio, part II. lib. i.

S 3

THE

BOOK XV. 1579. He lays fiege to Maeftricht.

THE inhabitants were not numerous in proportion to the extent of the place b; but it was strongly fortified, and the want of numbers was abundantly supplied by the martial spirit of the people, who, being exposed by their fituation to frequent invalions from foreign enemies, were well accustomed to the use of arms. About fifteen hundred of them were enrolled; and by these, and a thousand regular troops, together with two thousand of the country people, who ferved as pioneers, Maestricht was defended for almost four months, against an army of fifteen thousand foot and four thoufand horse, the best-disciplined and bravest troops in Europe, whose operations were directed by the greatest military genius of the age. Amongst the besieged there were two persons, Scwartzenbourg de Herle, a Fleming, and Tappin, a Frenchman, who conducted the defence with a degree of wisdom and intrepidity that excited universal admiration and applaufe.

Conduct of the fiege. THE prince of Parma, having arrived before the town in the beginning of March, sent Mondragone, with a part of the army, to the east side of the river, to invest the town of Vich; whilst he himself remained on the other

b It is five Italian miles in circumference.

1579.

fide, where he intended to make his principal BOOK attack. His first object was to prevent the States from introducing any fupplies or reinforcements. With this view, he shut up the Maefe with two bridges of boats, one above and the other below the town, and drew quite round his camp, on both fides of the river, strong lines of circumvallation. Immediately after taking this precaution, he began to make his approach to the walls by trenches. The garrison had the courage to make several fallies, by which his operations were retarded. At length, however, when by perseverance, and the power of superior numbers, his trenches were fufficiently advanced, he planted two batteries, one against the gate of Tongres, and the other against the curtain, between the gate of Hoxter and that of the Cross. While the batteries were played off with great fuccess, the Royalists pushed forward the trenches, and were ready to enter into the ditch. The breach at the gate of Tongres was the first made practicable, and Farnese resolved to affault it with a felect body of troops, drawn from the feveral nations of which his army was composed. By thus mingling them together, he inflamed their ardour and emulation; but they met with equal ardour on the part of their opponents, and, after an obstinate and bloody conslict, were obliged to retire.

THE

BOOK XV.

1579. Brave defence of Maestricht.

THE prince, believing that this first attempt had failed through the smallness of the breach, renewed the fire of his batteries with redoubled fury, and prepared for a fecond attack. In order to weaken the garrison by dividing it, he resolved to make an affault at each of the two breaches at the same time. His troops advanced, in the face of the enemy's cannon, with the most undaunted intrepidity. The besieged flood undifmayed till they approached, and nothing could exceed the fury with which both parties began the combat. Their fire-arms foon ceased to be of use to them; for they came immediately to close fight, in which they could employ only their pikes and fwords. In one of the breaches De Herle, and in the other Tappin, gave the most splendid proofs of capacity and valour. The affailants, enraged at meeting with fuch obstinate resistance from an enemy fo much inferior in number, exerted their utmost vigor to overpower them. The action was furious and desperate. The ruins of the wall, and the ground on both fides, were strewed with the dead and dying. Stones hurled down from the bulwarks, and artificial fires, which the belieged launched among the affailants, increased the confusion. Those fires happened to lay hold of the barrels of gunpowder which stood near for the use of the The explosion was terrible, and combatants. many

B O O K XV.

many on both fides perished by this fatal accident. The air refounded with cries, and shrieks, and groans. The earth was covered with mangled carcaffes; yet those who survived still maintained their ground with the same unconquerable obstinacy as before, and, from the horrid scene which lay around them, seemed only to derive fresh rage and fury. The prince of Parma gave orders at last, with much reluctance, for founding a retreat. The refolution and fortitude of the befieged, he perceived, were not to be overcome. Even if he could have mounted the breach, and kept poffession of it, this would not have availed him. as other fortifications had been raised within, which rendered the town almost as impregnable as before.

Upon reviewing his troops, the prince found that many of his best officers had fallen, and that the regiments of Spanish veterans were extremely diminished. He soon completed his numbers, by making draughts from the garrisons of the towns in his possession. But when he restected on the character of the besieged, he perceived the necessity of laying aside all thoughts of taking the town by storm, and resolved to content himself with the slower method of undermining the fortifications, employing for this purpose a prodigious number of pioneers,

B O O K XV. pioneers, and taking effectual care in the mean time, to render it impossible for the besieged to receive any reinforcement or supplies.

The States attempt in vain to relieve it,

THE States were not neglectful of the prefervation of a place, where both the garrifon and inhabitants had fhewn themselves so worthy of their attention. Having some time before received the celebrated La Noue into their fervice, they had appointed him governor of Maestricht, and given him the charge of conducting thither the reinforcements which they intended for the relief of the belieged. Nothing was omitted by La Noue to fulfil their expectations; but so pernicious were the confequences of that spirit of discord, which still raged as furiously as ever, between the protestants and catholics, that, although the council of state, seconded by the prince of Orange, gave him all the affiftance in their power, he was never able to collect a force fufficient to execute his purpose. The fituation therefore of the belieged was become extremely deplorable. The garrison, which in the beginning of the fiege confifted of a thousand men, was now reduced to four hundred, and the citizens and country-people had fuffered a proportionable diminution. Their provisions began to fail, and their store of gunpowder was nearly exhaufted.

THEIR

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

THEIR distresses were much augmented to- 800 k wards the middle of June, by their loss of a ravelin, which had enabled them to give great annovance to the enemy. To acquire poffeffion of this ravelin had been the chief object of the prince of Parma's operations for feveral weeks; and, though he met with the most spirited reliftance, he at length accomplished his defign, and could, with a large cavalier which he constructed, overlook the walls, and fcour the town with his guns, almost from the one end to the other. Still however the belieged, animated by the hopes of relief, refused to capitulate.

But the fiege was brought to a conclusion Maestricht much fooner than either of the two contending furprise, parties had reason to expect. On the 29th of June, it was fufpected by fome Spanish foldiers, that the wonted vigilance of the garrison was relaxed. In order to know the truth with certainty, these men crept silently to the top of the rampart, and found that the defendants were not only few in number, but overpowered with fatigue and heat, and buried in sleep. Of this they carried information to the general; who without delay ordered such of his troops as were nearest, to ascend the rampart with as little noise as possible. They were immediately followed by all the rest of the army.

The

BOOK XV.

1579

The garrison were thus suddenly overwhelmed, and almost all of them were put to the sword. The inhabitants sought desperately; but they sunk at last under the superior force of the assailants, who spared neither sex nor age; and continued the slaughter, till of eight thousand citizens, only three hundred remained. De Herle escaped by disguising himself in the habit of a menial servant; and Farnese issued strict orders to spare the life of the valiant Tappin.

The prince of Orange labours to quell the tumults in Ghent.

During the fiege of Maestricht, various political negociations were carried on by the opposite parties. The prince of Orange had at this time the chief direction of all the measures that were purfued by the States and council; Matthias having, from a consciousness of his own want of experience, left the entire administration in his hands. The diffensions between the Walloons and Flemings had from the beginning given him deep concern, and he had omitted nothing in his power to heal them. Among the Walloons he had little influence, by reason of their abhorrence of his religion. and the jealoufy which they had conceived of his designs. On the other hand, the Ghentese. who, in that age, were noted for their turbulent

Bentivoglio, part ii. lib. i. Meteren, lib ix.

and feditious spirit, had been wrought up by BOOK certain factious leaders to a degree of madness, and were long deaf to all the remonstrances which he could employ. St. Aldegond, whom he fent to deal with them, exerted, but in vain, all the address and eloquence for which he was fo highly celebrated. The interpolition of Matthias and the States was equally ineffectual. Nor did they pay any greater regard to the representations and threats of Elizabeth, who fent over an ambaffador on purpose to perfuade them. At length the prince of Orange went himself to treat with them. They had lately inveighed against him, with great severity, for his moderation towards the catholics; and had fuffered some of their preachers to arraign him on this account, as infincere in his religious profession. But, being flattered with that regard and confidence of which his prefent vifit was expressive, they resumed their wonted affection to his person; and, after he had flaid among them fome weeks, they complied with the feveral requests which they had hitherto rejected. They consented to make reflitution of the goods of which they had plundered the popish ecclesiastics; permitted the re-establishment of the rites and ceremonies of the Romish church, forbad all abusive lan-

d Mr. Davidson.

NO OK

1579.

guage, whether in the pulpit or in private-affemblies, and engaged to yield a more prompt obedience for the future to the authority of the States.

IT foon however appeared, that nothing but William's personal influence had induced them to make these concessions. In a few months afterwards, being incited by the fame factious leaders to whom they had formerly liftened, they indulged themselves in the most unjustifiable excesses; they plundered the churches and monasteries, expelled the ecclesiastics from the town, and feized their effects, which they distributed among the Germans, whom they had called to their affiftance against the Walloons. These and other enormities occasioned the prince of Orange to visit the Ghentese a fecond time; when they made him an offer of the government of the province. He prudently declined accepting this offer; but having again employed all his influence to quash the present diffentions in the city, he succeeded so far as to be able to compel Imbife the chief magistrate, together with his factious adherents, to leave the city. He likewise put the magistracy into the hands of the more moderate reformers, fet at liberty fuch of the Walloon nobility as were

e Thuanus, lib. lxvi.

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

still in prison, and procured for the catholic inhabitants, liberty of private worship, and fecurity from moleftation '.

BOOK

WILLIAM laboured with no less earnestness to affuage the resentment of the Walloons, who. although they had not been the first aggressors, perfifted in their hostile disposition, with the most unconquerable obstinacy. By the artifices of Matthew de Moulard, bishop of Arras, the count de La Lain, the marquis de Roubais, and others of the nobility, who beheld with deep malignity William's unrivalled credit and authority, the people had conceived the most incurable fuspicions, that, far from being actuated by a difinterested attachment to the civil or religious liberty of the provinces, he intended only his own exaltation, and was preparing to establish it upon the ruins of the catholic faith. They lent a deaf ear therefore to every plan of accommodation that was proposed, either by the prince himself, or by Matthias and the States; who, they knew, were entirely directed by his counsels 8.

THE prince of Parma was too fagacious not The prince to discern the advantage which this disposition of the Walloons afforded him, for drawing

of Parma

d Grotius, lib, iii.

Reidanus, lib. ii, p. 29.

them

B O O K XV.

them back to their allegiance. Soon after the death of Don John of Austria, he had, for this purpose, begun a negociation with their leaders; upon which he had bestowed particular attention, in the midst of those military occupations in which the fiege of Maestricht had engaged him. In order to frustrate his endeavours, the prince of Orange and the States remonstrated to the Walloons on the infidelity which would be justly imputed to them, if they should enter into any separate terms of agreement; and represented to them the danger to which they would thereby expose themselves, as well as the other provinces, of being again enthralled by the Spaniards. The Walloons could not entirely divest themselves of the scruples, which these remonstrances were calculated to excite; nor were they free from those apprehensions of the Spanish tyranny, by which the other provinces were fo much difquieted. They had not forgot the scenes of treachery and violence, of which they had been so often witnesses; and found it difficult to rely on the promifes of those, whose infincerity they had fo frequently experienced. On the other hand, their bigotry, joined with the inveterate jealoufy which the nobility entertained of the prince of Orange, formed an infurmountable obstacle against any agreement with the Flemings. That hatred with which they had

BOOK 1579.

had been long actuated against the Spaniards, began to yield to a more implacable aversion against the protestants; and in this they were confirmed by the address of the bishop of Arras, and the other agents of the prince of Parma; whose proposals of accommodation they were now inclined to embrace, provided it could be done confistently with those solemn engagements, under which they had lately come to the other provinces. To these engagements, according to the fense in which they themselves understood them, they adhered with inflexible fidelity; and perfifted to the last in requiring that all foreign troops should be immediately dismissed; that the pacification of Ghent should be fully executed; and that Philip should recognise their right to form alliances either within or without the Netherlands, in case of any infraction, on his part, of the articles of this pacification.

Of their feveral demands, there was none The Spanish which the prince of Parma found it fo difficult and Italian troops fent to digeft, as that of fending away the foreign out of the Nethertroops. Their place, he knew, could not be lands. supplied by the undisciplined forces of the country; and he dreaded that he should be obliged to abandon the plan which he had formed, for fubduing the maritime provinces. The king, to whom he applied for precise in-Vol. II. structions.

BOOK XV.

1579.

structions, was no less averse to this concession. But Philip, confidering the recovery of the Walloons (the most warlike of all the inhabitants of the Netherlands) as a matter of the last importance; especially in the present juncture, when his exchequer was drained by the expence which he had incurred in the conquest of Portugal; and hoping, that by the indulgent measures which he had resolved to espouse in his treatment of the Walloons, he should be able ere long to obtain their confent to whatever he should require of them, he sent orders to Farnese to hasten the conclusion of the treaty; and it was accordingly concluded in the following terms: That all foreign troops in the fervice of the king, should leave the Netherlands in fix weeks, and never return thither without the confent of the Walloon provinces: that an army of national troops should be levied, to the payment of which the king might apply the subsidies to be granted by the States: that all persons in public offices should take an oath to maintain the catholic religion: that all the privileges of the provinces should remain inviolate: and that the government should be preserved in the same form in which it had been left by the late emperor when he refigned his dominions b.

May 17th.

h Bentivoglio, part ii. lib. i.

This treaty was figned, on the part of the provinces, only by the deputies of French Flanders, Artois, and Hainault. The other provinces were not called, as Luxemberg had never concurred in any of the late transactions; and the greatest part of Limburg and Namur had already submitted to the king's authority.

THE prince of Orange, no stranger to the The union fecret motives of the leading men among the Walloons, having foreseen that this agreement would certainly take place; had, in order to provide a counterpoise against it, set on foot a new treaty of alliance among the provinces of Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Guelderland, Friefland, Brabant, and Flanders. This alliance was called the Union of Utrecht, from the place where it was brought to a conclusion. It may justly be considered as the first foundation of the republic of the United Provinces. It is still regarded as containing the fundamental laws of the constitution, and proves its author, by the wifdom, moderation, and extensive views which it discovers. It contains neither any avowal, nor any express renunciation of their allegiance to Philip; but the provinces tacitly assume to themselves the sovereign authority, and lodge it partly in the general affembly of the States, and partly in the States

B O O K XV.

of the several provinces. The principal articles of this confederacy are those which sollow: "That the several provinces contracting, unite themselves together in one political body, renouncing for ever the power of separating from each other; but reserving each to itself all the rights which it possessed.

"That the faid provinces shall assist each other to repel the attacks of any foreign power; and, in particular, to repel whatever violence may be offered to any of the contracting parties, in the name of the king of Spain, under the pretext of establishing the catholic religion, or on account of any transaction in the Netherlands, since the year 1558; leaving it always to the generality of the union to determine in what proportion each province shall be obliged to surnish its supplies, either of money, or of troops.

General Holland and Zealand, no religion but that which is already established shall be openly professed; and that the other provinces shall be at liberty to allow either of the protestant religion, or the catholic, or both, as they themselves shall judge expedient: that restitution shall be made of the effects which belonged to the convents and churches, in all the provinces except those of Holland and Zealand;

of the republic of

land; and in these, that pensions shall be appointed to the popish ecclesiastics, to be paid them wheresoever they reside. B O O K XV.

- "THAT all frontier, and other towns, which the general and provincial States shall think proper to fortify, shall be fortified at the joint expence of the generality, and of the particular province in which they lie; but if the General States shall on any occasion think proper to build new forts, without the consent of the particular province in which they lie, the generality shall furnish the whole expence.
- "THAT all fortified towns shall be obliged to receive such garrisons as the generality shall appoint, on condition that the troops shall, besides their oath of allegiance to the General States, take a particular oath to the province and town in which they are stationed.
- "THAT the General States shall not conclude any peace or truce, nor undertake any war, nor impose any taxes, without the consent of the majority of all the provinces and towns of the union; and that, on the other hand, no town or province shall enter into any alliance with any foreign prince or power, without consent of the generality.

In Box-F-E

B O O K XV. "That in case any prince or state shall incline to accede to this alliance, he may be admitted, with the consent of all the members of the consederacy.

"THAT all the male inhabitants of the provinces, from the age of eighteen to that of fixty, shall, in a month after the publication of the present treaty, inscribe their names in a register to be laid before the General States at their first assembly, to assist them in judging what forces each province is able to surnish.

"THAT in order to procure the money neceffary for the support of the forces, all the taxes shall be farmed out publicly, to those who shall make the highest offer; and lastly, that the said taxes shall be heightened or lowered according as the General States shall judge the exigencies of the confederacy to require."

This confederacy was not immediately attended with those advantages which it was defigned and calculated to produce. It behoved the religious parties to experience, for some time longer, the mischievous effects of their intemperate zeal and bigotry, before they could live at peace. In several places, the people were still agitated by the most violent animosity against one another. In Bois-le-duc,

the

the protestants and papists took arms, and BOOK coming to blows, had feveral hundreds of their number killed. Soon after this, the proteftants, being feized with a fudden panic, abandoned the town to their enemies, who immediately submitted to the Spaniards.

In Antwerp, where the protestant party was violence of the most powerful, the people insulted the po- flants. pish ecclesiastics, when employed in one of the folemn processions of their religion; and in fpite of Matthias and the prince of Orange, who interposed their authority to protect them, they obliged them to leave the city.

THESE violences, which the reformers, im- Count Egpelled by their religious zeal, exercised in tempt on Antwerp and other places, ferved only more eafily to reconcile the catholics to the Spanish government; and contributed not a little to make feveral of the nobility forfake the party of the States. Among these was count Egmont, fon of the great, unfortunate count Egmont. This young nobleman had hitherto distinguished himself by his zeal against the Spaniards; but refolving now to make his peace with them, he attempted, with a regiment of Walloons, to render himself master of Brussels, in order to deliver it to Farnese; and he succeeded so far in his defign, as to get possession of one of the T 4 gates.

BOOK XV.

3579.

gates, and introduce his troops into the city. The citizens ran instantly to arms; and, being joined by fome regular forces in the service of the States, they quickly recovered the gate by a fingular stratagem. Having driven violently towards it fome waggons loaded with hay and ftraw, they fet fire to these combustible materials, and the wind blowing the flame and fmoke towards count Egmont's foldiers, they were obliged to betake themselves to flight. The whole inhabitants had, in the mean time, got under arms, and Egmont, with the rest of his men, was flut up in the market-place, hemmed in on every fide, and without any prospect of deliverance. There they remained during that day and the night following; neither of the two parties being inclined to begin hostilities. The citizens mean while indulged their refentment, by reproaching the count with his treachery, in forfaking those who had taken arms to revenge his father's death; calling out to him, that only eleven years before, on the same day of the year, and in the very place where he then stood, his father had died a martyr for that cause, which be now wanted so basely to betray. This bitter remembrance drew tears from the young man's eyes. The people were moved with that compassion for the fon, which they owed to the memory of the father,

father, and confented to fuffer him and his BOOK troops to leave the town '.

1579

During the course of these transactions, con- Conferences ferences for reconciling the Netherlands to Cologn. Philip were held in the city of Cologn, at the request and under the mediation of the emperor, the pope, and the electors of Treves and Cologn. The pope fent thither Castagna, archbishop of Rossano, who afterwards attained the papal dignity, and assumed the name of Urban VII. The chief of the emperor's embaffy was count Scwartzenburg. Philip named the duke de Terra Nuova for his ambassador, and the duke d'Arschot was at the head of the deputies from the States. From this nomination of persons of so great eminence and distinction, superficial observers were apt to imagine, that the negociation committed to them could not fail to be brought to the defired conclusion. But this was not the judgment of persons of greater penetration. They confidered, not only that the prince of Orange, and the other popular leaders, by whom the States were governed, had already gone too far to expect forgiveness from the unrelenting temper of the king; but that the opinions of the reformers were more widely diffused, and their zeal, if

Grotius, p. 64. Meteren, book ix. p. 250. possible,

8

BOOK possible, more ardent than ever. And as there was no reason to believe that they would ever be perfuaded to abandon their religion, fo there was little ground to hope that Philip's bigotry would fuffer him to agree to any terms of peace, whilst they adhered to it. It was in reality this cause chiefly, by which the present negociation, as well as all preceding ones, was frustrated. Philip acted on this occasion with his usual duplicity, and gave private instructions to his ambaffador, of very different import from those which had been communicated to the emperor k. At first, he feemed willing to ratify the pacification of Ghent; and by one of the articles of that treaty, religion was to remain on its present footing, till a general assembly of the States should alter it. But in the course of the conferences it appeared, that the re-establishment of popery was a condition without which he would agree to no accommodation. Neither would he confent to the convoking of the affembly of the States, nor to the ratifying the election of Matthias; and he still insisted peremptorily, that all cities, forts, and military stores, should be immediately delivered into the hands of the prince of Parma. In a word, the terms offered on this occasion were, in every material article, the same with those which had been

k Strada, lib. v.

formerly

formerly rejected by the provinces of Holland BOOK and Zealand, when they stood alone, and unfupported by the other provinces; and therefore it is difficult to suppose that Philip could, from the beginning, have intended any thing by the prefent negociation, but to gratify the pope and emperor, at whose defire it was begun.

1579-

BEFORE the dissolution of this congress, Philip athowever, he humbled himself fo far as to gain over the make private offers to the prince of Orange. prince of Orange. These were, the payment of his debts, the restitution of his estates, a compensation for the loffes which he had fustained during the war, and the liberty of his fon the count of Buren, upon whom, if the prince himself should incline to retire into Germany, the king promifed to bestow the government of Holland and Utrecht. These offers were made in Philip's name by count Scwartzenburg, who pledged his faith for the strict performance of them. William could not but be flattered with the testimony which was thus given, by an enemy fo great and powerful, of the dread that was entertained of his abilities. But being superior to the allurements of interest, he preferred the glory of faving from flavery a people who confided in his integrity,

284

B O O K XV. integrity, to all the advantages which he or his family could have derived from the favour of the king. "He would liften to no propofal," he faid, "that related to himfelf only. He was confcious, that, in all his conduct, he had been animated by a difinterested affection towards the public good; and no consideration would induce him to enter into any agreement, from which the States and people were excluded: but if their just claims were satisfied, he would not reject any terms for himself, which his confcience and honour would suffer him to accept."

Diffolution of the conSoon after this the congress was dissolved; and no other effect was produced by it, except that the duke d'Arschot, and some other deputies of the States, embraced the opportunity, with which it furnished them, of reconciling themselves to the king.

THE negociations for peace did not entirely interrupt the operations of the war. By the affiftance of the catholic inhabitants, the prince of Parma acquired possession of Mechlin; and some time afterwards of Villebrock.

Reidanus, p. 29. Grotius, p. 66.

Thefe

These losses were compensated to the States, BOOK by fome acquifitions which their forces made under the count of Renneberg; who, besides reducing the province of Friesland, made himself master of Deventer and Groningen. In the fouthern provinces, the Flemings and Walloons were engaged in perpetual hoftilities against one another, but no exploit was performed by either party, fufficiently interesting and important to deserve to be recorded.

Their lating waster commentative to reach and a legister of the scale of the second course of

instable of the field of

# STORY

fertlements in Africa, and the adjacent about

ed, and had pesettated bolds into almost part bank are OF THE REIGN OF

Terminated has community associated that

# PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

Localitical and will be a strong to a stro

#### BOOK XVI.

WRING the course of the preceding BOOK transactions in the Netherlands, Philip was affiduously employed in preparing to affert state of his claim to the kingdom of Portugal, an ob- Portugal. ject fitted to inflame a more moderate ambition than that of Philip, and worthy of all the attention and expence which he bestowed in order to acquire it. Under a succession of kings. who placed their glory in promoting commerce among their fubjects, and in making difcoveries in the remotest regions of the globe, the Portuguese had attained a degree of consideration among the European nations, from which the narrow limits of the kingdom, and the neighbourhood

288

BOOK XVI. bourhood of the Spanish monarchy, seemed for ever to exclude them. Besides establishing settlements in Africa, and the adjacent islands, they had doubled the Cape of Good Hope, which no European mariners had ever attempted, and had penetrated boldly into almost every corner of the great eastern ocean, discovering lands till then unknown, and founding cities, with a view to the advancement of their trade. And not satisfied with their acquisitions in the East, they had turned their arms towards America, and planted in Brasil, that valuable colony, of which they still retain possession.

Don Sebaf-

John the Third, the last of those great kings under whose government the Portuguese performed such mighty atchievements, died several years before the present period, leaving his throne to Sebastian, his grandson, who was then only three years old. This young prince gave early indications of many splendid accomplishments, which excited in the minds of the Portuguese the most sanguine hopes of a prosperous and happy reign; but unfortunately for himself, as well as for his people, he was animated with the most chimerical ambition, which led him not to imitate the example of his illustrious ancestors, by studying to promote the true happiness of his subjects, but prompted him to

9

extend

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

extend his dominions, in order to propagate the \$ 6 0 R Romith faith, of dolds Alehi tiene and winner

a declaration of Everens This paffion was cherished in him by Don His roman-Alexis de Menezes, his governor, and Lewis ticambiation. de Camarra, a jesuit, his tutor or instructor; the former of whom was perpetually celebrating the praises of his predecessors, on account of their victories over the Moors in Africa and the Indies; while the latter impressed his young mind with a perfuasion, that it was the first duty of a Christian king, and the most acceptable service which he could perform to the Deity, to extend the knowledge of the true religion. By these means, his ambition was inflamed to a degree of madness; and, in order to accomplish that design which appeared so meritorious and honourable, he once resolved to fall with a fleet and army to India; nor could his courtiers persuade him to relinquish that romantic project, till they proposed that, in place of it, he should undertake an expedition against the Mahometans in Africa. From this enterprize likewife his wifest counsellors laboured with much folicitude to divert him: but their exhortations proved ineffectual. bastian adhered to his purpose with inflexible obstinacy, and exerted himself, with great activity, in making preparations for carrying it into execution.

VOL. II.

IN

BOOK XVI. 1579. State of Morocco,

In the midst of these preparations an opportunity presented itself, which he considered as a declaration of Heaven in favour of his defign. On the death of Abdalla, king of Morocco, his fon, Muley Mahomet, had feized upon the crown, in contradiction to an establifhed law of fuccession, that the kingdom should devolve to the brother of the deceased king. A civil war enfued, and Mahomet. after having loft feveral pitched battles, was compelled to leave his uncle, Muley-Moluc, a prince of great abilities and virtues, in possesfion of the throne. After attempting in vain to engage Philip to espouse his cause, Mahomet applied to Sebastian, and offered, if he would reinstate him in his dominions, to put certain towns into his hands, and to become tributary to the crown of Portugal. ed so led without eas of

Sebastian resolves to invade Morocco. SEBASTIAN liftened to these offers with the utmost pleasure, and readily engaged to pass over himself to Africa with a fleet and army.

To enable him to fulfil this engagement, he folicited affiftance in troops from his uncle the king of Spain, from some Italian powers, and (which shews how anxious he was to insure success) from the prince of Orange.

35794

In answer to the application which he made Bolo E to Philip, that monarch proposed an interview with him, in the town of Guadaloupe in Caftile. Sebastian agreed to this proposal; and the Spanish historians relate, that, in the interview which was held foon afterwards. Philip endeavoured to diffuade him from his intended enterprise; but that, having found him inflexible, he promifed, before they parted, to affift him with fifty gallies and five thousand men-They add, that not long after, Philip, dreading that the great number of Turks in the fervice of Muley-Moluc might reduce Morocco under the dominion of the Sultan, made an offer of his friendship to that prince, who, being likewise under apprehensions of danger from the Turks, gladly accepted of it, and entered into the proposed alliance. The same historians inform us, that about this time Philip obtained, through the intercession of the Venetians, a truce of three years from the Sultan, and that he was prompted to humble himself so far, as thus to treat with the inveterate enemies of Christianity (which he had never vouchfafed to do before), by the anxiety which he entertained with regard to the transactions in the Netherlands ..

Marky-Marco, davide received early in-Ferreras, vol. x, p. 306. 342.

NOOK XVI.

\$579-

The prince of Orange was not less anxious concerning the issue of these transactions, yet his conduct was extremely different from that of Philip; whether it proceeded from his native magnanimity, joined with a desire of giving proof, in the sight of all Europe, of the strength of the consederate provinces, or from the hopes of securing Sebastian's friendship to the consederacy in some suture period; by whichsoever of these motives William was instructed on this occasion, he gave the kindest reception to Da Costa, the Portuguese ambassador, and afterwards sent three thousand Germans to the assistance of Sebastian.

His army.

THESE troops, with ten thousand Portuguese, and some Italians and Spaniards that were sent him by Philip, notwithstanding his late treaty with Muley-Moluc, made up an army of sisteen thousand men. With this army, and a great number of pioneers, Sebastian set sail from Portugal in the beginning of summer one thousand sive hundred and seventy-eight, and landed them all safe at Arzile and Tangiers, where he was joined by Mahomet, the exiled king, with a body of Moorish troops.

He arrives in Morocco.

Muley Mo-

MULEY-MOLUC, having received early intelligence of his design, had endeavoured to di-

b Thuanus.

vert him from it, by offering him certain territories adjacent to those sea-coast towns in Africa which belonged to the crown of Portugal. This heroic prince had been the more folicitous to prevent Sebastian's invasion, because he laboured under an inveterate disease, which he believed would foon prove mortal; and he was defirous to leave his dominions in peace to his brother, whom he considered as his rightful heir. But when he found Sebastian deaf to his propofal, he had exerted all his native vigour in preparing for his defence, and had drawn together an army confifting of more than fixty thousand horse and foot, asw boiler aid to approach of dead

BOOK

WITH this army he advanced towards the enemy, and when he had arrived within a few miles of their camp, as he doubted the fidelity of a part of his troops who had formerly been attached to the interest of his nephew, he published a proclamation, giving liberty to all, who should incline, to pass over to the Portuguese. But few of them embraced this opportunity which was offered them. His magnanimity, and other virtues, had overcome their attachment to Mahomet, and determined them faithfully to support their present sovereign.

SEBASTIAN was earnestly intreated by his Imprudence of Sebastian. most experienced officers, and by Mahomet, U 3 who

BOOK XVI.

who was greatly discouraged at seeing so small a desertion from his uncle's army, to keep within his intrenchments, near the sea-coast, and not to expose his troops to the risk of a battle; but that obstinate, imprudent prince rejected with disdain this wholesome counsel, because he thought that it savoured of timidity, and not only led out his army from the camp which he had fortified, but marched into the centre of the country to meet the enemy.

his proposal, he had exerted all

Moruc's diffemper, in the mean time, had made the most rapid progress; yet the strength of his mind was unabated. If he had not dreaded the quick approach of death, he would have been fatisfied with cutting off Sebaffian's communication with his things, and as the Portuguefe were badly furnished with provisions. have brought the war to a conclusion without fighting; but he dreaded the effect which his death might produce upon his troops, and therefore refolved to bring on, as foon as poffible, a general engagement. Sebastian's rashness rendered it easy for him to execute this refolution. Without regard to the great superiority of Moluc's forces, that infatuated prince ventured to advance into an open country, where the whole Moorish army, horse as well as foot, could be employed. Moluc improved, with great dexterity, the advantage which wasthus

thus afforded him. Having drawn up his Brocock army in the form of a half-moon, he went in his litter through all the ranks, exhorting his troops to remember, that their religion and diberty were at stake; and affuring them, that by whatever pretext Sebastian had offered to justify his present unprovoked invasion, his real defign was, to reduce the Moors to flavery, and to extirpate their religion. Then, after he had, given all the instructions which he thought neceffary to enfure fuccefs, finding his ftrength almost quite spent, he committed the command of the army to his brother, and retired to a little distance from the field.

A more ticulated differs of freedom of the end

1579.1

THE battle was begun with a furious dif Battle of charge of the artillery; but the two armies Alcazar. came foon to close fight, and the Portuguele infantry repulsed the Moors in different places with great flaughter. In the mean time the Moorish cavalry, amounting to thirty thoufand, having wheeled round from both wings; had inclosed the enemy on every quarter; immediately after which, they attacked them on the flanks, and in the rear, while they were purfuing the advantage which they had gained over the Moorish infantry. By the Portuguese horse, a body of the Moors were repulsed, and driven towards the place to which Moluc had retired. Fired with indignation at the fight, U 4 he.

His charge-

3 579-

BOOK he threw himself out of his litter, and having got on horseback, by the affistance of his attendants, he rallied his flying troops, and was about to lead them back to the field of battle. But by this exertion the fmall remains of his strength were entirely exhausted. His officers feeing him unable to support himself on his horse, carried him to his litter, where he fainted, and only recovered to desire that those about him would keep his death fecret, till the. battle should be decided; immediately after which, putting his finger on his mouth, as a further injunction of fecrecy, he expired.

Death of Muley Moluc.

His charac-

A MORE striking display of strength of mind occurs not in the annals of history. Moluc was besides endued with every amiable and respectable accomplishment, being no less conspicuous for justice and generosity, and (which were rare endowments in a native of Africa) integrity and eandor, than for prudence, vigour, magnanimity, and fortitude. By his bravery and conduct he delivered his kingdom from the oppression of a tyrannical usurper; and if he had lived, he would have advanced it to a degree of prosperity and glory to which it has never attained.

His troops remained under a perfualion, that he was still a spectator of their behaviour. Great Great numbers of them fell. The Portuguele, BOOK the Spaniards, and Germans, fought with the most undaunted intrepidity; but the horse being driven upon the foot, broke their ranks. and threw them into confusion. The Moorish cavalry then pressed forward in thousands on every fide, and made dreadful havoc among them, till almost all of them were either slain or taken prisoners.

SEBASTIAN himself, who still survived the fatal catastrophy, had, in the arrangement of his troops, and in the beginning of the engagement, acted the part of an expert commander: and he gave afterwards many conspicuous proofs of the most heroic valour, flying from rank to rank, encouraging and exhorting the troops; exposing himself to every danger; and often mingling fword in hand with the thickest of the enemy. Having had three horses killed under him, and his standard-bearer slain, his foldiers, in the confusion of battle, mistook another standard for his, which they slocked round, and left their king almost alone. Moors called out to him, that if he would furrender, they would spare his life; " But you cannot," replied he, " preferve my honour." Then accompanied only by the count of Vimiofo, Christopher Tavora, and Nunno de Mascaregnas, he threw himfelf into the midst of the enemy,

B O O K XWI. enemy, and fought desperately, till Vimioso and Tavora sell by his side, and he himself, breathless and exhausted, and unable any longer to wield his sword, was seized, and disarmed by the surrounding Moors.

Death of Se-

THESE men quarrelled with one another concerning their royal prisoner, and from words they had recourse to arms; when a Moorish officer coming up, put an end to the dispute, by discharging a furious stroke of his sabre on the head of the king '.

In this manner perished the brave, but rash Sebastian; whose fate affords a striking instance of the pernicious tendency of courage and ambition, when they are not tempered with prudence and moderation. About eight thousand of his troops were killed, and all the rest, except a few who escaped to Arribe and Tangiers, were reduced to slavery. Of the nobility, the greatest part were sain; and several of the most illustrious families in Portugal became extinct d.

c The account of Sebastian's death rests entirely on the testimony of Don Nunno de Mascaregnas, who was an eyewitness; nor did De Thou think there was any reason for calling it in question; though some other authors insimuate, that Sebastian laid violent hands upon himself.

d Mahomet, the exiled king, was drowned in attempting to make his escape; and Hamet, Muley Moluc's brother, succeeded to the throne of Fez and Morocco.

DON

Don Henry, grand uncle of Sebaftian, a eardinal and a prieft, fucceeded to the throne: but being of a weak and fickly constitution. and far advanced in years, there was little probability, either that he would live long, or that he would leave any iffue behind him; and his fhort reign ferved only to give the feveral pretenders to his kingdom an opportunity of preparing to affert their claims to the fucable how he could ever expect to ceffion.

Don Henry king of Portugal.

THE candidates were feven in number: the Candidates dutchefs of Braganza, the king of Spain, the ceffion. duke of Savoy, Don Antonio Prior of Crato, the duke of Parma, Catherine of Medicis, and the fovereign pontiff.

Philip to one Mi claim, to nothing but folly

for the fuc-

THE four first were grand-children of Emamuel the Great, father of Henry. The dutchess of Braganza was daughter of prince Edward, Emanuel's fecond fon; Philip was fon of the empress Isabella, his eldest daughter; the duke of Savoy, of Beatrix his younger daughter; and Don Antonio was a natural fon of Lewis. who was a younger fon of Emanuel, and brother to the present king. The duke of Parma was great grandfon of Emanuel, by a daughter of the above-mentioned prince Edward. The Queen-mother of France founded her claim on her supposed descent from Alphonso III. who died

died about three hundred years before the prefent period; and the pope pretended that Portugal was feudatory to the fee of Rome, and
belonged to him, fince the male-heirs in the
direct line were extinct. Gregory had conceived a violent defire to make his natural fon a
king, and he had once flattered himself with the
hopes of making him king of Ireland, through
the affistance of Philip. But as it is inconceivable how he could ever expect to persuade
Philip to quit bis claim, so nothing but folly
or dotage could have determined him to prosecute his own, in opposition to so powerful an
antagonist.

THE pretentions of Catherine of Medicis, and her hopes of success, if she entertained any, were not less chimerical than those of the pope. It can hardly be believed, that this political princess could, in her present competition, have any other end in view, but to obstruct the ambitious designs of Philip, and to surnish the court of France with a pretence for opposing him.

From the dukes of Savoy and Parma, Philip knew that he should not meet with opposition; since, besides that his claim was better founded than theirs, these princes were in close alliance with him, and depended much upon

his

his fupport and protection. Could Don Antonio have proved his mother's marriage, his right to the throne would have been unqueftionable. He attempted to prove it, but in vain. Still, however, he persisted in his purpose, and with some address and great activity, he gained over a confiderable party among the people. Most of the nobility, on the other hand, and the king himself, who knew the vanity of Antonio's pretenfions to legitimacy, were inclined to support the claim of the dutchess of Braganza; whose right, they thought, was clearly preferable to that of Philip, not only because she was descended from Emanuel by a male, and Philip by a female; but because an ancient and fundamental law required, that crown should not be inherited by a stranger.

1579.

PHILIP's agents at the court of Lisbon al- Philip's lowed, that if the dutchess of Braganza's father had been alive, his title would have been indifputable; but they maintained, that fince he had died without attaining possession of the throne, nothing but the degree of confanguinity to Emanuel ought to be regarded; and that as the dutchess and he were equal in that respect, the preference was due to a male before a

The duke of Braganza himfelf was fprung, though not in a direct line, from the royal blood.

female.

female. And they farther infifted, that the law which excludes strangers from inheriting the crown, was not applicable to bim, since Portugal had formerly belonged to the kings of Caltile.

little weight, except with those who were for other reasons inclined to espouse Philip's interest, the duke de Ossuna, his ambassador, endeavoured to impress the scrupulous and timid mind of Henry with a persuasion, that, in opposition to so powerful a competitor as the king of Spain, it would be impossible for the duke of Braganza to maintain possession of the throne; and that the fruits of all the glorious discoveries and conquests which had been made by his father and brother would be lost, and the kingdom itself involved in the calamities of war.

Don Henry discusses the claims of the competitors. Henry's defire to prevent these unhappy consequences, determined him to proceed with great deliberation in examining the pleas of the contending parties. He consulted civilians in different parts of Europe, and called a convention of the States of the kingdom, to give him their opinion with respect to the measures proper to be pursued. The members of the convention differed widely in their sentiments from each other, and while some of them advised him,

### PHILIP IL KING OF SPAIN

him, without delay, to nominate for his fucceffor whichfoever of the competitors he thought fit, others exhorted him deliberately to examine the feveral claims that had been offered. In compliance with this last advice the candidates were cited to appear; and they all fent commiffioners, who pleaded the cause of the princes whom they represented, before Henry, as they would have pleaded any ordinary point of right before a civil judge.

This extraordinary trial, in which fo great Henry's deliberations. attention feemed to be paid to justice, was fuited to the feeble and irrefolute character, as

well as to the habits of the king, who had fpent his life in liftening to the idle disputes of theologians. But his conduct was feverely cenfured by all men of prudence and understanding. They considered that the fate of kingdoms can almost never be decided by the forms or principles of law; and they regarded this farcical trial, not only as useless for the purpose which was intended, but as calculated to divide the kingdom into factions, which must fooner or later produce a civil war.

He ought in the beginning, it was faid, to His improhave declared himself in favour of the dutchess of Braganza, whose right, according to the most common and obvious law of fuccession.

was unquestionable; and who, besides, was much more acceptable to the nation, than any other of the candidates. He ought, after this, to have caused her right to be recognised by the convention of the States, who would cheerfully have consented to acknowledge it; he ought to have required an oath of allegiance to her, in the event of his own demise, from the army, and all persons in public offices; and then, instead of losing his precious time in consulting and deliberating, he ought to have employed it, in putting the kingdom into a posture of desence against the king of Spain.

But Henry was incapable of forming any resolution that required so much courage, vigour, and activity. He was no less attached to the dutchess of Braganza, and no less averse from Philip, than his nobility and people; yet he still continued to deliberate as if he had expected to live for many years.

In order to extricate himself from this perplexity, Henry began to think seriously of a proposal, which had been made to him by some of his counsellors, to marry; and accordingly, notwithstanding his great age, his infirmities, and his having borne so long the character of a priest, he sent an ambassador to solicit a dispensation from the pope. There was little probability

bility of his living to fulfil his intentions, and much less of his leaving any iffue behind him; yet Philip, being greatly alarmed at his defign, sent Ferdinand de Castello, a Dominican Friar, to diffuade him from it, by reminding him of the offence which his marriage would give to all true catholics, and the triumph it would afford to the Lutherans, and other sectaries of the age; and when Henry refused to admit Castello to an audience, a circumstance that furnished Philip with a stronger proof of Henry's alienation from him, than any which he had hitherto received, he employed all his interest at Rome, to prevent the pope from granting the dispensation.

BOOK 1579.

In the mean time he spared no pains to con- Philip's ciliate the favour of the principal nobility; and having spread his emissaries over the kingdom, he published a manifesto, in vindication of his title, calling upon the people to turn their eyes towards bim, as the only person who would have a right to the throne after the decease of This manifesto, while it inthe present king. cenfed Henry more than ever against him. ferved in no degree the purpose for which it was defigned. The Portuguese entertained the thoughts of falling under the dominion of the Castilians with an hereditary and violent averfion; and there was nothing in the cha-VOL. II. racter X

B O O K XVI. racter of Philip by which their prejudice could be overcome.

Ir Henry had availed himself of this dispofition of his fubjects, and acknowledged the dutchess of Braganza for his successor, almost the whole kingdom would have concurred to fupport her claim; and so great a force might have been prepared, as, with the affiftance of foreign powers, would have either determined Philip to abandon his defign, or have prevented him from carrying it into execution. But as the duke and dutchess of Braganza were deterred from exerting themselves, by their dread of Philip, and the weak irrefolute conduct of the king; fo Henry still flattered himself with the vain conceit, that Philip, as well as the other competitors, would fubmit to his decision.

Don Antonio declared illegitimate. Towards his nephew, Henry acted with much less hesitation and reserve, than towards the other candidates. Having obtained a bull from the pope, empowering him to judge of Antonio's claim to legitimacy, he examined the witnesses whom Antonio produced to prove his mother's marriage; and, having extorted from two of them a confession of their having been suborned, while the other two contradicted each other in delivering their evidence,

2

Henry,

Henry, on this foundation, joined with the cir- BOOK cumstance of the Prior's being mentioned by his father in his latter will as his natural fon, passed sentence, declaring him to be illegitimate.

Antonio had influence afterwards to perfuade the pope to recall his bull, on the pretence of the king's having exceeded his powers, By this treatment Henry was highly exasperated both against the pope and Don Antonio; and he indulged his refentment against the latter, by banishing him first from the court, and afterwards from the kingdom. In obedience to this fentence, Antonio retired for some time into Castile; but he soon returned, and found, that his uncle's conduct towards him had not produced that effect upon the people which Henry had expected. Their attachment to the Prior remained as strong as ever; and, as no pains were taken to form a party in the interest of the dutchess of Braganza, great numbers of the people were entirely devoted to him, and regarded him as their only resource against the tyranny of Spain.

FROM this disposition of the people, together Philip's miwith the activity which Antonio displayed in parations. augmenting the number of his partizans, Philip perceived that he must not satisfy himself with

X 2

arguments,

B O O K XVI. arguments, manifestos, and private applications to individuals, but must resolve to support his claim by force of arms. Agreeably to this refolution, he issued orders for levying troops in Spain, Italy, and Germany; and gave instructions to the marquis de Santa Croce to hold the fleet in readiness for action. He was aware how much reason he had to expect opposition from several of the European powers; and, in order to prevent them from being alarmed, he caused a report to be propagated, that, having entered lately into an alliance with the new king of Morocco, his present military preparations were intended for an expedition which he had agreed to undertake, in conjunction with that monarch, against Algiers. This pretext ferved the purpose which he defigned; and neither the king of France, nor the queen of England, nor any Italian or German prince, feemed to attend to his operations.

In the mean time Henry's health declined daily, and all about him perceived that his death was fast approaching. He appeared now more desirous than ever to have his successor fixed; and having for this purpose summoned the States to meet at Almerin, he seems to have resolved to declare himself either in favour of the king of Spain, or the dutchess of Braganza, according

according as he should find the one or the other of these competitors most acceptable to the States. But the members of this affembly could not agree. Most of the nobility and ecclesiastics had, by different means, been gained over to the interest of Philip, while the deputies of the cities were animated with the most irreconcilable aversion to his person and government. an make their subs

BOOK 1579.

In the midst of their deliberations and diff Death of putes the king died, leaving the nomination of 31#, 1580. his fuccessor to five persons, to whom he committed the regency of the kingdom.

. THE first act of the administration of the regents was to fend ambaffadors to Philip, to diffuade him from having recourse to arms, till, according to the will of the late king, they should deliver their judgment concerning his right to the fuccession. But to this request, Philip, whose preparations were now complete, gave the following reply: " That his right was clear and indifputable; that he would not fubmit it either to the regents, or to the States, and that he did not defire to have any judgment whatever passed in confirmation of it,"

By this answer the regents were thrown into great perplexity. A majority of them stood X 3 well

B O O K XVI.

well affected towards Philip, but they were prevented from declaring in his favour, by their dread of the indignation of the people, and were obliged to iffue orders for equipping the fleet, and ftrengthening the fortifications and garrisons of the frontier towns. But the great exertion which had been made lately by Sebastian, and the exhausted state to which the kingdom had been reduced, by the numberless expeditions to India and America, from which no fruit had been yet derived, fufficient to compensate either for the expence which they had cost, or the loss of men which they had occasioned, rendered it impossible for the regents, if they had been ever fo much inclined. to secure the kingdom against so great a force as the Spanish monarch had prepared.

Philip's fleet and army. His army, including four thousand pioneers, amounted to thirty-five thousand men, and his fleet consisted of thirty men of war, seventeen frigates, and seventy gallies and ships of burden loaded with provisions and military stores. It was not likely that so great a sleet and army would find employment in subduing a kingdom so ill prepared for desence, and so much weakened by intestine divisions, as Portugal at the present period. But, besides that Philip was, from natural temper, generally cautious to excess in his military enterprises, it should seem that.

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

311

that, in the present case, he regarded the importance of the prize more than the difficulty of attaining it; unless it be supposed, that he still had reason to apprehend that the French and English would interpose.

of his on voriew had basided tile doise trong.

BOOK

HE gave the command of the fleet to the Commandmarquis of Santa Croce, who was reckoned croce, the ablest naval officer in Spain. But he hesitated for some time with regard to the person whom he should place at the head of his landforces. His helitation, however, did not proceed from any doubt which he entertained with regard to the merit and abilities of his generals. For the duke of Alva was still alive: whom Philip knew to be possessed of every qualification requifite to fecure the fuccess of his intended enterprise.

ban's concentrate of the same the

ALVA, upon his return from the Nethers and the lands, had been admitted by Philip to the fame Alvadegree of favour and confidence which he had formerly enjoyed. But his fon, Don Garcia de Toledo, having debauched one of the maids of honour, under a promise of marriage, Philip. had put him under arrest, and given orders that he should not be released till he should consent to fulfil his engagement: notwithstanding which, his father had affifted him in making his escape; and, in order effectually to disap-X 4 point

B O O K XVI. point the king's intention, had concluded a marriage between him and his cousin, a daughter of the marquis of Villena.

but the realist to any count that the Longit and

PHILIP, highly provoked with this contempt of his authority, had banished the duke from court, and confined him to the caftle of Uzeda. Alva bore this indignity with extreme impatience, and perfuaded the pope, and fome other foreign princes, to employ their interceffion in his behalf; but all his applications for forgiveness had hitherto been ineffectual, and he had remained almost two years in confinement. This feverity, exercifed, for fo fmall an offence, towards an old friend and fervant, in the decline of life, was by some ascribed to Philip's imperious temper, and his implacable refentment; whilft others faid, that he had been long difgusted with Alva's arrogance; and that the duke's conduct in the affair of his fon. was only a pretence which Philip made use of, to justify himself for dismissing from his prefence a man whose temper and manners were become intolerable.

To whichfoever of these motives Philip's treatment of Alva could be ascribed, it was expected, that neither his pride, nor his natural suspicion and distrust, would have suffered him to commit the charge of an enterprise of so

great

### PHILIP H. KING OF SPAIN.

313 B Q Q K XVI.

the Spanish

Jane 1580.

1200015

great importance as the prefent, to one towards whom he had shewn himself so inexorable; and it excited great furprife, when he fent two of his fecretaries to the duke, to inquire whether his health would permit him to undertake the command of the army which he had prepared for the conquest of Portugal. To this inquiry, Alva, without hesitation, replied. that he was ready to devote the little health and strength that were left him to the service of the king; and immediately afterwards he fet out for Barajas to receive his instructions. He defired liberty to pay his respects to Philip at Madrid. But so ungracious was this prince even towards fuch of his ministers as he esteemed the most, and so incapable of entirely forgiving any offence or injury, that he refused to grant him admittance into his presence; and, having transmitted his instructions to him at Barajas, he ordered him to join the army as foon as possible. Those who remembered the barbarous cruelty which Alva had exercifed in the Netherlands, were not forry for the mortification which he fuffered on the present occafion; but they could not with-hold the tribute of applause which was due to him, on account of that inflexible fidelity fo becoming in a fubject towards his fovereign, which determined him, in the extremity of old age, to expose himself to all the hazards and hardships of

war,

B O O K XVI. war, in order to advance the interest of a prince by whom he had been treated so ungratefully.

March of the Spanish troops. June 1580. From Barajas Alva went, as foon as he had received his inftructions, to join the troops, which were affembled at Badajox; and foon afterwards he began his march towards Elvas and Olivença. These, and all the other towns which lie north from the Tagus, as far as Setubal, on the western coast, though extremely averse to the Spanish government, yet being utterly unprepared for resistance, opened their gates, and proclaimed Philip for their sovereign.

THE marquis de Santa Croce, who had set fail with the sleet from Port St. Mary, near Cadiz, found the same facility in reducing Faro, Lagos, and other towns on the coast of Algarva and Antejo; and he came in sight of Setubal, in a sew days after the arrival of the land-forces at that place.

ed the country and the quies

Progress of the Spanish arms. HITHERTO almost no blood had been shed, and neither the sleet nor army had met with any opposition to retard their progress. The duke of Alva intended next to march without delay to the capital, but it was necessary, he thought, to proceed now with greater circumsspection

fpection than before, as Don Antonio had drawn together a confiderable body of forces, had been admitted into Lifbon, where he was proclaimed king by the people, and had ftrengthened several of the towns and forts by which the Spanish army must pass in their approach to that city.

B O O R XVI.

THREE ways of reaching Lifbon were proposed in a council of war that was held on this occasion. One of these was to cross the Tagus, some miles above the city, at the towns of Almerin and Santaren; another, to fend round the fleet to Almada, and to put the troops on board at that place, which lies almost directly opposite to Lisbon; and the third; to carry the army round by fea from Setubal to Cascaes. The two first of these ways was thought preferable to the last, by most of the officers, because they were safer; yet the last was embraced by the duke of Alva. He acknowledged the justness of what his officers advanced in support of their opinion, but he obferved, that, as the fleet was at hand, the army could be immediately put on board; that the paffage to Cafcaes was not long, and that, as the enemy were ill prepared for their defence, his fuccess would be greatly facilitated by the celerity of his approach.

316 B O O I

XVI.

ALVA was not disappointed in his expectation of the effect which his fudden arrival was calculated to produce upon the Portuguese. They were drawn up along the shore, as if they had intended to dispute his landing; but no fooner had the ships begun to fire upon them. than they retired, and fuffered him to land, and put his men in order, without giving him the smallest molestation. They might still have obstructed his approach to Cascaes, as his road thither lay over a hill, defended with a battery of cannon, and full of rugged rocks and brambles, of which Don Diego de Meneses, commander in chief of the Portuguese under Don Antonio, had taken possession with between three and four thousand men. Alva ordered the Spaniards to attack them, without being deterred, either by the strength of the ground, or the number of the enemy. An old experienced officer, of the name of Bariettos, an intimate friend of Alva's, asked him in a whisper, Whether his attempting, with so little precaution, to dislodge an enemy so firongly fituated, did not refemble the action of an ardent young warrior, rather than that of an experienced general? Alva fmiled, and replied, That a good general ought, on some occasions, to employ the prudence and circumspection of old ag, and in others, the ardour

and

and confidence of youth. The event shewed BOOK that his conduct, though apparently rash, was well adapted to the present circumstances. The Spaniards, inspired with their general's confidence, advanced boldly, and the Portuguese (almost all of whom were raw and undisciplined) retreated, without waiting for their approach.

ALVA laid fiege immediately afterwards to the town and castle of Cascaes, and by the briskness of his operations, he soon compelled the garrison to surrender. But on this occafion he fullied that renown which his wisdom and vigour would have procured him, by the cruelty which he exercised towards such of the Portuguese as had thrown themselves upon his mercy. In violation of his promife to Don Antonio de Castro, lord of Cascaes, who had joined him upon his first arrival in the kingdom, he gave up the town to be plundered by the Spaniards, and having fent all the foldiers in the garrifon to the gallies, he put to death, without any form of trial, Don Diego de Meneses, a nobleman of an illustrious family, and one who, on account of his personal merit, was univerfally respected and beloved. this barbarity Alva was prompted by private refentment against Meneses 4; although, it may

BOOK XVI.

be prefumed, that he would not have ventured to indulge it on the prefent occasion, had he not known that his conduct was conformable to the fentiments of the king. It was calculated to inspire the Portuguese with terror, but it served likewise more than ever to alienate their affections; and considering how much superior the Spanish sleet and army were to any force which had been prepared to oppose them, it could not be coloured with the tyrant's ordinary plea of necessity.

From the town of Cascaes, Alva led his army against the forts of St. John and Belen, both which he soon reduced to the necessity of surrendering; and being seconded in his operations by the sleet, the example of these places was quickly followed by Almada, and almost all the other fortisted towns on both sides of the river.

Don An-

During these transactions Don Antonio, after having, from a consciousness of the weak-ness of his party, essayed in vain to obtain advantageous terms from Philip, had pitched his camp, with all the forces which he could collect, on the east side of the river of Alcantara, on the road to Lisbon.

ALVA

the hopes of an accommodation, in order to afford time for the operation of a spirit of despondency that prevailed in Antonio's army. Meanwhile he omitted not to procure the most accurate information concerning the fituation and strength of his camp; and, on the 25th of August, he resolved to attack it. Before he could approach the entrenchments, it was neceffary that he should make himself master of the bridge of Alcantara, or lead his army to a confiderable distance up the river, the banks of which were fo fteep and rugged, as rendered it impossible to transport either horse or foot in fight of the enemy. Having drawn up his main army in order of battle, directly oppofite to the Portuguese camp, he sent the horse under his fon Ferdinand de Toledo, and two

- ALVA amused himself for several days with BOOK

COLONNA'S troops were twice repulsed, but in the third onfet being supported by a body of Germans, which the duke fent to their affiftance, they drove the Portuguese before them, and fecured poffession of the bridge.

thousand select infantry, under Sancio d'Avila, to cross the river several miles higher, where the banks were practicable, whilft he ordered Colonna, with the Italians, to make an affault

upon the bridge.

Soon

320

BOOK XYL

Defeat of the Portuguele under Antonio. Soon afterwards Toledo and d'Avila appeared. The Portuguese, astonished at the fight of them, and dreading that their communication with the city might be intercepted, threw down their arms after a short resistance, and betook themselves to slight. The Spaniards purfued, and slew between two and three thousand before they could reach the town.

Don Antonio, who displayed on this occasion neither fortitude nor conduct, had sled with his troops to Lisbon. There he knew that he could not remain long in safety, as, besides the insufficiency of the fortifications, the magi-strates, and many of the inhabitants, were disassed to his interest; and therefore, immediately, after releasing all the prisoners in the city (a poor expedient to recruit his ruined army), he set out, attended by the count de Vimioso, and the bishop of la Guarda, with a small number of troops, for the town of Santaren.

THE magistrates of Lisbon did not hesitate a moment in resolving to submit to the conqueror, and the town was, immediately after the battle, delivered into his hands. The Portuguese sleet at the same time struck their colours to the marquis de Santa Croce, and receiv-

ed

ed fuch a number of his Castilians on board as BOOK gave him the entire command.

als terractive they mode this

It was now become Philip's interest to pro- Cruel treatvide for the fecurity of Lifbon and its fuburbs, Portuguefe, as much as for that of any of his towns in Spain; and Alva fo far fulfilled his engagement with the magistrates, as to prevent any formidable number of his troops from entering the town; but he gave up the fuburbs (which were at that time no less considerable than the town itself b to be ranfacked and plundered, without making any distinction between the friends and enemies of the king. He fuffered them likewise to pillage the houses of such of the inhabitants within the town as had difcovered any attachment to Don Antonio, and he allowed parties to go out and plunder all the country and villages in the neighbourhood. A Spanish historian says, that the foldiers committed these enormities without the duke's permission, yet no punishment was ever inflicted on them, and no restitution was ever made to the many thousand innocent persons, who were involved in the fame common ruin with the guilty.

AFTER a conduct so barbarous and impolitica there was little reason to expect that the people

. Thuanus, c. lxx, c. x

VOL. II.

BOOK XVI. 1580.

of Lisbon would be able foon to overcome their aversion to the Spanish government. From their dread of Alva's tyranny they took the oath of allegiance which was prescribed to them; and, from the fame motive, they were present at those public rejoicings which he appointed to be celebrated on account of his fuccess; but being unable to conceal the anguish of their minds, the acclamations which they uttered were feeble, and intermixed with fighs and groans.

THE duke of Alva's joy, foon after his entrance into Lisbon, was interrupted by intelligence which he received from Spain, that Philip had fallen fick, and that his physicians were extremely apprehensive of the issue of his distemper. Alva knew that the king's death, at this crisis, would probably render all his labours and fuccess in Portugal abortive, and therefore he fuspended for a while the profecution of the war.

Unreduced some for conformation and all his barre

New preparations of Don Antonio.

In this interval Don Antonio exerted himfelf with great activity, and employed every expedient which he or his partizans could devife to raife another army, flattering himfelf with the hope of being able to maintain his ground, all the French, or some other foreign power, should be perfuaded to espouse his cause.

alone in racinom grain ou recome to sil mentance

cause. In the town of Santaren he had lately B Q.O. been received by the people as their only rightful fovereign, and every mark of affection and respect had been shewn him; yet so great a change had his defeat and flight produced that they refused to admit him within the town. till he engaged that he should not remain in it beyond a limited time; and, immediately after his departure, they fent ambaffadors to the duke of Alva with an offer of submission.

FROM Santaren Antonio directed his course northwards, and in the province which lies between the Minho and Douro, he prevailed upon eight or nine thousand of the inhabitants to take up arms. With these tumultuary troops he procured admittance, partly by force and partly by persuasion, first into Aveiro, and afterwards into the city of Oporto; but in both these places he exercised a degree of severity towards those whom he suspected to be his enemies, that was extremely ill calculated to increase the number of his friends.

He remained at Oporto till he was informed that the duke of Alva, being delivered from his anxiety with regard to the king's health, had fent a part of his forces against him, under Sancio d'Avila, who was advancing towards the banks of the Douro with great rapidity.

> D'Avila Y 2

B O O K XVI. D'Avila had under his command only five or fix thousand horse and foot, and Antonio's army confifted of about nine thousand; but from past experience, the latter was deeply fenfible of the difference between his undifciblined forces and those of d'Avila, and he was well acquainted with the character of that general; who, in the Netherlands, and other places, had given the most conspicuous proofs of military skill and intrepidity. His safety he knew depended on his preventing the Spaniards from croffing the Douro, which, for many miles above Oporto, was fo deep and rapid, that without boats they could not attempt to pass if. He exerted himself therefore with diligence in removing the boats and barks from the fouth fide of the river, and planted his troops at different places on the north fide, to watch the motions of the enemy.

Progress of the Spaniards under d'Avila. In the mean time d'Avila advanced, and took possession of Villanova, a little town which stands opposite to Oporto. From that place he sent a party of his troops in search of boats; who returned without success: but d'Avila being resolved to omit nothing in his power to accomplish his design, sent them back with orders to pursue their march a great way further up the river, which they did accordingly, and collected about twenty boats,

from

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

from places at fo great a distance from Oporto, BOO that Antonio had judged it unnecessary to remove them. Still, however, most of the Spanish officers thought it impracticable to effectuate their passage with so small a number: and it was impossible to bring them down the river, on account of some armed vessels which Antonio kept ready to intercept them. To remedy this inconvenience, d'Avila ordered a part of his troops to march up to the place where the boats lay, and there he transported them, without opposition, to the other fide. These troops had time to intrench themselves. before the enemy received intelligence of their landing; and, under the shelter of their intrenchments, the rest of the forces were immediately carried over in the same way. or which there is no escale transfire is made

This unexpected fuccels in the beginning of Defeat of his enterprise, gave d'Avila the highest assu- tonio. rance of victory, and demonstrated how little reason he had to dread the efforts of an enemy. who, on fo critical an occasion, had shewn themselves so deficient both in courage and vigilance. Their conduct afterwards was fuch as their negligence and cowardice, in permitting the Spaniards to land in small bodies, one after another, gave reason to expect. D'Avila drove them before him, till, with very little bloodshed, they were entirely routed and dif-Y 3 perfed.

B O O K XVI.

spersed. This active general lost no time in fending a party of horse in pursuit of Don Antonio, who had fled, accompanied by a finall number of his partizans, to Viana, a town on the fea-coast near the northern frontier of the kingdom. Upon the approach of the Spaniards to that place, he attempted to make his escape by sea, but was driven back by a violent fform, which overtook him foon after he had embarked. He then dismissed his attendants, and, difguifing himfelf in the drefs of a common failor, eluded the fearch of his purfuers. Philip had recourse to his favourite weapon, a profcription, and offered a reward of eighty thousand ducats to any person who should deliver him into his hands. Notwithflanding this, fo great was the aversion of the Portuguese towards the Castilian government. or fuch their attachment to Antonio, that no person was tempted by the proffered reward, either to feize him, or to give information of the place of his retreat. Antonio remained in the country between the Minho and Douro from November till May, living fornetimes in the houses of the nobility, and sometimes in monasteries and convents, till he found an opportunity of going by fea to France.

Enrice fubinftion of Portugal; AFTER the dispersion of the Prior's army, all the towns between the Minho and Douro open-

### - PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

327

ed their gates, and fubmitted to the con- BOOK queror. The regents appointed by the late king had fome time before declared themselves for Philip; and the duke of Braganza, who feemed to have despaired from the beginning of being able to affert his wife's title to the throne against so potent an antagonist, had taken the fame oath of fidelity and allegiance that was required from others, and entered which world

sorts, while he was employed in the perfect

THE colonies in America, Africa, and the of the colo-Indies, which belonged to the crown of Portugal, quickly followed the example of the mother-country; nor did Philip find employment for his arms in any part of the Portuguese dominions but the Azores, where Antonio's agents had perfuaded the people to proclaim him king. Some troops which were fent against them under an officer of the name of Valdes, were defeated by the governor of Angra. In the following year Antonio obtained from the court of France a fleet of fixty ships, with about fix thousand troops, which he landed on one of the isles called St. Michael; but the marquis of Santa Croce coming upon him with a fleet and army much fuperior to his, obtained a decifive victory over the French both by fea and land, and afterwards reduced all the inha-

bitants

B O O K XVI. bitants to a state of entire subjection and obe-

THE fuccess of Philip's arms, and the great accession of dominion which he had thereby acquired, occasioned much anxiety to the neighbouring powers; and excited in the Dutch and Flemings the most alarming apprehensions, They had with infinite difficulty withflood his efforts, while he was employed in the pursuit of that plan of conquest which he had now carried into execution; and they feemed, at this time, to have much greater reason than ever to dread that they should foon be obliged to submit to whatever terms of peace he should be pleased to prescribe. Yet, as will appear from the fequel, Philip's acquilition of the Portuguese dominions in India served rather to expose him to the affaults of his revolted subjects. than to furnish him with the means of subduing them, and contributed more than any other event to that wealth and greatness which they afterwards attained .

Antonio escaped, and once more returned to France, and the marquis de Santa C oce treated all his French prifoners as pirates, because war had not been declared between France and Spain.

Thuani hift. fui temp. an. 1579-80. Cabrera, l. xiii.

okar.

ROOK feat that librarefoliantly retain former of the foreign donfe for his Dod of and

weakingthe. After the department their maint-OF THE REIGN OF THE REIGN OF analyzation the revolted la ming of the entires,

## PHILIP THE SECOND,

# his and Brook of K XVII.

thend to Maches, is dead man, other superi-

are all money by Inciredictions at the Balling I HILE Philip's arms were employed in fubduing the Portuguele, the prince of Parma had little room for the exertion of that State of afactivity and enterprife, by which his character Netherwas fo eminently diffinguished. Having, according to his late agreement with the fouthern provinces, dismissed his Spanish and Italian forces, he had thereby weakened his army fo much, as to render it unable to keep the field. The States of these provinces had laboured in vain to fulfil their part of the agreement. Their finances were exhaufted, all their levies were carried on flowly, and their cavalry were fo few in number, that they had been obliged to confent

fairs in the

BOOK XVII. fent that Farnese should retain some of the foreign horse for his body-guard.

Ir was fortunate for him, that at this juncture the confederates were in a similar state of weakness. After the departure of their auxiliaries, only a finall number of troops remained; and, after the revolt of fo many of the nobility, and the death of the count de Boffut, which happened about this time, there was fcarcely a fingle officer, a native of the Netherlands, whom they could intrust with the chief command. Matthias, a young man of no experience, bore the name, but was incapable of difcharging the duties of governor. The whole weight of the administration lay upon the prince of Orange, who was involved in an endlefs maze of the most intricate political negociations; and without his continual presence, activity, and vigilance, the weak frame of the confederacy would quickly have fallen to pieces. William was therefore obliged to leave the direction of military affairs to the count of Renneberg, La Noue, and Norris; and although these men were not deficient either in spirit and intrepidity, or in prudence and good conduct, yet they neither had forces sufficient to undertake any important enterprise, nor means to Support fuch as were under their command.

Bentivoglio, part II. lib. 1.

THE greatest part of Brabant and Flanders BOOK had acceded to the union of Utrecht; but the strength of the confederacy was not proportioned to its extent. The union of the several members was not fufficiently compact, the administration was not properly afcertained, and there was no common centre of power and authority established. The troops were scattered in small bodies throughout the provinces; no adequate provision was made for their pay: they lived at free quarters on the inhabitants; and, as luxury is the constant attendant of itcentiousness, the country was miserably oppressed and plundered, and the people reduced to an incapacity of furnishing the necessary contributions and fupplies. In this fituation many persons lamented that they had not embraced the opporunity lately afforded them, of making their peace with the king; and they began to accuse the prince of Orange, who had advised them to reject the conditions that had been offered, of having preferred his private interest to that of the provinces. A spirit of discontent prevailed every where, except in Holland and Zealand, and it was generally believed, that they must soon either make their peace with the King of Spain, or elect some other fovereign able to deliver them from the calamities with which they were overwhelmed.

### HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

337
BOOK
XVII.

1580.
The causes of their dif-

trefs,

The prince of Orange was at this time in Ghent, employed in quieting the disturbances above-mentioned. At the desire of the States he published a vindication of his conduct, together with his sentiments concerning the causes of that distress in which the provinces were involved, and the means of their deliverance. As what he said on this occasion, and some weeks afterwards, in the assembly of the States at Antwerp, contains an interesting view of the states at Antwerp, contains an interesting view of the states at will not be improper to lay before the reader an abstract of the principal particulars.

Explained by the prince of Orange.

HE began with complaining of the injustice of those by whom he had been accused of having contributed to render ineffectual the late negociation for peace at Cologn. " For no perfon in the Netherlands, he said, had greater reason than himself to wish for peace, since without it he could never hope to obtain either the liberty of his fon, whom he had not feen for many years, or the recovery of the many rich inheritances which he had loft, of the power of passing the remainder of his life, which now began to decline, free from labour and anxiety. But while for these reasons, joined with compassion for the miseries of the people, -no person could more ardently desire to have an end put to the war, he could not help confidering

fidering war, with all its calamities, as infinite- BOOK ly preferable to the proffered peace; by one article of which many hundred thousands of the inhabitants would have been driven into exile; and by another, all who remained, exposed to the cruelty of the Spaniards, without any fecurity either for their liberty or their lives. but the promises of those by whom the most folemn oaths had been often violated. These were not his fentiments only of the peace that had been offered, but the fentiments likewife of the States, and of all the fincere friends of their country; nor could that detraction and calumny in which many persons had of late indulged themselves, be ascribed to any other cause, but the secret machinations of those, who, from felfish views, were desirous of reducing the Netherlands under the Spanish voke. The states, but he same beginning the

"THERE was much ground, he acknow-ledged, for complaining of the irregularities of which the troops had been guilty in some of the provinces; but nothing could be more unjust than to throw the blame on those who were intrusted with the reins of government. The governors of States ought to be judged of sometimes by the orders which they issued, and not by the success with which their measures were accompanied; for what could it avail to inter-

function of the month of the second of the s

pose

BOOK XVII.

pole their authority, when they wanted power to enforce obedience? The difregard fhewn by many, to the orders of the States and council; was the principal fource of the evils complained of. In all the provinces, except Holland and Zealand, there was scarcely a single town that would admit the garrifons appointed for its defence. To this was to be ascribed that facility with which the enemy had made themfelves mafters of Alloft, and other places; and it was owing to the same cause, that the troops were fo much scattered throughout the provinces; the consequence of which was, that the inhabitants of the country and of the open towns, fuffering equally from the forces of the States that lived at free quarters upon them, and from the incursions of the enemy, were totally disabled from contributing their share of the public expences. Thus there was no fund fufficient for the regular payment of the troops; without which, it was in vain to expect either that they could be kept under proper discipline, or employed successfully in any important enterprise.

"To remedy the abuses complained of, the most effectual method was to place numerous garrisons in the frontier towns. For if this were done, the great number of small garrisons would become unnecessary; and the interior parts

parts of the provinces being thereby delivered BOOK both from the oppressions of their friends and the devastations of the enemy, the people would be more able to furnish their proportion of the fupplies, the troops would be paid more regularly, and discipline more easily maintained.

"THE States ought not however to stop there, but to exert themselves strenuously in drawing together fuch an army of regular forces, as might face the enemy in the field, or at least disturb and interrupt their operations. It was their want of fuch an army that had occafioned the loss of Maestricht; and, if care were not taken to fupply that want, there was ground to apprehend, that the confederacy would foon be stript of all the towns in the inland provinces. But in order to carry this, or any other expedient into execution, it was necessary that, instead of suffering each town or province to difpose of its troops and contributions as it thought fit, a senate or council should be established, with authority to determine every thing relative to the application of the public funds and the conduct of the war.

HE was far from intending that this council should be invested with the power either of imposing taxes or of enacting laws. He meant only that it should be empowered to levy such

taxes

1580.

BOOK taxes as were imposed, and to execute such laws as were enacted, by the general States of the union. That it should not be subject to be controuled by particular towns or provinces nor obliged, in applying the public money, diftributing garrifons, and regulating the motions: of the troops, to have recourse on every emergency to the States; but should have such a degree of difcretionary power conferred upon it, as would enable it to feize the opportunities of action when they offered, and to conduct the operations of the war with fecrecy and difpatch." thursday are stoned formation and setting the

William exhorts the confederates to renounce their allegiance.

in the

theresently lok of Markett 1 to BESIDES these and some other points of less importance, William ventured, both in the writing which he published, and afterwards in the affembly of the States, to explain his fentiments concerning another subject, which he had long revolved, and concerning which he had founded the inclinations of many of the deputies. Having, before the present period, despaired that peace could ever be restored between the king and the confederated provinces, he exhorted the deputies to confider, whether they were not now in a fituation which required that, renouncing their allegiance to Philip, they should transfer it to some other prince, who was able and willing to defend them.

म् । इंटर्स्ट्र वर्षा के तंत्रक्षिक स्थानिक विभाग II JEV

In the eyes of the greater part of Europe, BOOK this propofal appeared in the highest degree audacious. Philip had, ever fince his accession, Ha reasons been confidered as the most powerful prince of the age; he had lately received an immense increate of power by the acquifition of Portugal, and men could not doubt that the revolted provinces must soon yield to his superior arms, and bitterly repent of the offence which they had given him.

REASONS however were not wanting to shew, that the measures proposed was the best which the people of the Netherlands could embrace in their present circumstances. If they could have entertained the prospect of obtaining peace on tolerable terms, it might be difficult perhaps entirely to vindicate their conduct. The evils which accompany a change of government, are generally fo great, and the obligation to maintain the present, so strong and powerful, that nothing but the most urgent necessity can ever justify a people for shaking off their allegiance to their legal prince. But, from the iffue of the late negociations at Cologn, it was manifest, not only that Philip was unalterably fixed in his purpose to govern the Netherlands with despotic authority, in contradiction to their fundamental rights and laws; but that the utter extirpation of the protestants. VQL. II.

BOOK who were now become a most considerable part of the people, was a condition, without which he was determined never to be reconciled. Defolation therefore, and flavery, must have been the certain confequences of peace, and no greater evils could be apprehended from a continuance of the war. " Even allowing (faid the prince of Orange, in the affembly of the States) that the king should be perfuaded, by any mediating power, to grant us fuch conditions as our consciences would suffer us to accept, yet what fecurity can we obtain for his fulfilling them? He has, before this time, been fet at liberty by the pope from his most facred obligations. It is an established maxim of Philip and his counsellors, that with heretics, fuch as we are, no promifes or oaths are binding. Although he were of himself inclined to fulfil his engagments, yet the Roman pontiff and the Spanish inquisitors would reclaim, and soon persuade him to alter his intention. It has been faid by fome, continued William, that he is a prince of a compassionate disposition, and that we may fafely rely upon his mercy. Of the truth of this, we can best judge from what we have feen and known. Do the deeds that have been perpetrated by his command, in India, in Italy, or in Granada, authorife us to form this favourable judgment of his character? Has not every corner of the Netherlands

Netherlands been overflowed with the blood BOOK of thousands of our countrymen, barbarously butchered by his command? Are not all the neighbouring kingdoms filled with his fubjects, who have been driven from their native land. either to enrich the countries that have afforded them protection, with our trade and manufactures, or to drag out a miserable life in poverty and exile? We know how grievously our late conduct has offended him, and from what we have feen on former occasions, we may judge of the measure of his resentment. He may humble himfelf fo far as to foothe us with the hopes of a more mild administration; but we should remember the discovery which we made lately, when, by the letters that were intercepted, it appeared, that instead of the generous purposes that were pretended, nothing was meant but to employ some of the provinces as instruments of vengeance against the reft;" ad choirs a release and a refer and a refer

INFLUENCED by these considerations, which Opposition shewed that Philip had entirely lost the confi-tholics. dence as well as the affections of his Flemish fubjects; a great majority of the deputies were inclined to renounce his authority. Some of the catholic members, however, prompted partly by their political principles, and partly by concern for the fafety of their religion, had the 7. 2

theird against them with the most implecable

BOOK XVII.

the courage to remonstrate. They expatiated on the greatness of Philip's power, and the danger to which the States would expose themselves, by adding so great an affront to their former provocations. And to their representations on this head they subjoined, that they could not adopt the strong measure that was proposed, consistently with their oath of allegiance; since the king was unquestionably their rightful sovereign, they had all solemnly recognised his right; and the provinces were his inheritance, which he had derived from a long uninterrupted line of illustrious ancestors.

But this reasoning had no weight with the prince of Orange, St. Aldegonde, and the other leaders of the protestants. They considered the breach between Philip and the confederated provinces, as irreparable; and knew, that long before the present period, he was animated against them with the most implacable resentment. "It was too late, they said, to talk of keeping measures with the king; and no part remained to be espoused, but to provide against the effects of his displeasure. Nor was there the smallest reason for those scruples by which the catholic members were disturbed,

Bentivoglio, part ii. 1. i.

either with regard to the lawfulness, or the expediency of renouncing their allegiance. Kings were invested with authority, not for their own fakes, but for the interest of the people whom they were appointed to govern. If the rights of princes were to be investigated, they would be found, in most of the kingdoms in Europe, to have been derived from the will of their fubjects, who, grown impatient under the injuries of former princes, had taken from them, and given to their fuccessors, what they had an undoubted right to bestow. A prince was indeed superior to each individual in a State; but neither his interest, nor his pleasure was to be put in the balance with the fecurity and happiness of the whole. On the contrary, he might be judged, and even punished for his abuse of power, by the supreme council of the nation. If this truth were doubted of in other places, it could not be controverted in the Netherlands; where, till lately, both the name of king, and the measure of obedience which kings commonly require, were utterly unknown. In the Netherlands the engagements between the prince and the people were firicily mutual; and in engagements of this fort, it was a clear and universal maxim, that the infidelity of either of the two contracting parties, absolves the other from the most facred obligation.

Meteren, lib. x. and Grotius, p. 70.

THE

Z 3

BOOK XVII.

Deliberations about electing another fovereign.

THE protestant members, in comparison with whom the catholics were rew in number, being thus confirmed in their purpose of abjuring the dominion of Philip, the affembly proceeded next to confider, whether they should substitute another fovereign in his place, or establish a republican government, upon the plan of that confederacy which was already formed. The latter of these measures would have been embraced by all the deputies; by the protestants, from the conformity between the principles of a commonwealth, and those of their religion; and by the catholics, from their persuasion that fuch a government would neither be so highly affronting to the king, nor fo effectually preclude the hopes of a future reconcilement. But the present feeble state of the United Provinces obliged them to facrifice their inclination to their preservation and security. From the representation which the prince of Orange made of the diforders that prevailed, together with the view which he exhibited of their strength and refources, they were convinced, that however strenuously they might exert themselves. they would be able to wage only a tedious defensive war; by which their strength would be gradually wasted, till they were at last compelled to accept of fuch terms of peace as the king should be pleased to prescribe. To have recourse therefore to the assistance of some foreign

reign prince, feemed not only expedient, but BOOK necessary; and to engage the prince of whom they should make choice to espouse their cause with greater zeal and fincerity than they had hitherto experienced in their allies, they refolved to confer upon him the fovereignty of the Provinces, with all the prerogatives which had been enjoyed by the princes of the house of Burgundy, server by the salt ion ad radion

would have been inclined to diseast evidentialistics

Nothing now remained but to fix upon the Motives for person to whom the offer of this high dignity duke of fhould be made. The prince of Orange, hav- Anjou. ing before-hand founded the inclinations of the Emperor and other German princes, had found them utterly averse to taking any concern in the affairs of the Netherlands. The queen of England, and the duke of Anjou, brother to the king of France, were the only princes at that time in Europe, between whom the States thought there was ground to hesitate; and they were determined to concur in giving the preference to Anjou, by the prince of Orange; who, besides representing to them the necessity of electing a fovereign who would refide in the country, informed them that their making choice of the duke, would be highly acceptable to the queen. " For she had writ to him on the subject, and given him affurances of granting the States her affiftance, in case

B O O K XVII. the fovereignty were conferred on one with whom she had so much reason to expect to live on amicable terms."

From this it should feem, that William had offered to employ his influence in favour of Elizabeth; and it may be prefumed, that unless he had found her averse to his propulal, neither he nor the other protestant leaders would have been inclined to give the preference to Anjou. Very different motives indeed were affigned for the prince's conduct; by his enemies. His principality of Orange, they obferved, lay in the centre of France. He had lately married Charlotte de Bourbon, of the blood royal of that kingdom . For many years he had maintained an intimate correspondence with the leaders of the Hugonots; and he flattered himself with the hopes of enjoying the entire direction of the duke of Anjou, a weak prince, who would probably be more attentive to his pleasures, than to the affairs of government. These interested considerations, it is likely, were not entirely without their influence; but the other circumstance above mentioned feems to afford a still more fatisfactory account, fince there was in reality ne room

301

d Meteren, lib. x.

<sup>·</sup> Daughter of the duke de Montpensier.

for belitation between Elizabeth and Amou; BOOK and Elizabeth, as will appear in the fequel, would certainly have rejected the fovereignty. in case an offer of it had been made to her. This political princess expected to derive advantage from that animolity which the election of Anjou was likely to produce between the courts of France and Spain. And the prince of Orange knew, that as it would be easier to reconcile the catholics in the United Provinces to the election of a prince of the fame religion with themselves, than to that of a protestant; fo, without making fuch a choice, there was little probability that he should ever prevail on the Walloons to accede to the confederacy. Whatever were William's motives, a great majority of the deputies entered readily into his opinion, and they would have proceeded infantly to the election, had it not been deemed a matter of too much confequence to be decided without confulting their constituents.

In the mean time the operations of the war were not wholly discontinued, although neither taken priof the two contending parties was in a condition at this period to make any great or vigorous exertion. By means of a stratagem conducted by count Egmont, Farnese acquired posfession of Courtray in Flanders, as he did by the like means of fome other places. On the other

346

B O O K XVII.

other hand, count Egmont and his brother were taken prisoners by La Noue in the town of Ninove: and not long afterwards La Noue himself lost his liberty. This gallant officer having been attacked unexpectedly by the marquis de Roubais, commander in chief of the Walloon forces, was overpowered by numbers; and obliged, through the disadvantage of his ground, to furrender himself a prisoner of war. The States were fenfibly affected by the loss of a person of such uncommon abilities, and they offered to give in exchange for him count Egmont and the baron de Selles, who had been taken prisoner at Bouchain. But the prince of Parma refused to consent to this exchange, faying, that he would never agree to give one lion for two sheep. La Noue was conducted to the castle of Limburg, where he remained long; and, during his confinement, employed himself in writing those military and political discourses which were afterwards published, and much admired by his cotemporaries. Count Egmont's relations, and those of de Selles, folicited Philip with great importunity to confent to the exchange proposed. But this prince, who never hearkened to the voice of gratitude or compassion where his interest interfered, declined complying with their request; and, rather than yield to the enemy fo great an advantage as the recovery of La Noue, he chose

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

to leave his friends to languish in prison for fe- B O O K yeral years.

THESE two noblemen bore this indignity with extreme impatience. De Selles, conscious of having exerted himself with the most fervent zeal in detaching the Walloons from the revolted provinces, fell a facrifice to the indignation and chagrin which the king's ingratitude and his own unfortunate fituation were calculated to inspire. The same causes produced a different, but no less melancholy effect, on count Egmont, whom they deprived of the use of his understanding. Through the tender affiduous care of his fifter, whom the States permitted to attend him, he recovered from this diffress. But Philip still declined confenting to the exchange till the year one thousand five hundred and eighty-four, when La Noue engaged in the strictest manner never to bear arms against him in the Netherlands; and the king of Navarre, the duke of Lorrain, and others, became fureties for his fulfilling this engagement. It is difficult to determine whether Philip's conduct afforded on this occasion a more striking proof of pusillanimity or ingratitude, while no stronger testimony could have been given of the extraordinary merit of La Noue, and the dread which

348

BOOK

which his enemies entertained of his abis lities'. thought for the

count Renmeberg.

Defection of ABOUT the time when La Noue was taken prisoner, the confederacy fustained another loss by the defection of count Renneberg. This young nobleman having been appointed governor of Friesland by the States, had subdued the cities of Deventer and Groningen, besides feveral other places of confiderable confequence; and his zeal and fervices were the more highly valued, as all his relations adhered to the Spanish interest, and he himself was of the catholic perfuation. But these circumstances which gave him fo much merit in the eyes of his countrymen, were the means by which he was enticed to abandon the cause which he had hitherto fo illustriously supported. The prince of Parma readily perceived the advantage which they afforded for gaining him over from the confederates; and, with this view, he employed the count's fifter and her husband, the baron de Monceaux, to offer him the following terms of accommodation: That he should be confirmed in the government of Friesland, and have that of Overyssel annexed to it; that twenty thousand crowns should be immediately

Bentivoglio, part ii, lib. i. Reidanus, lib. ii. p. 39. and Meteren. ביה כסתכנורים נס

paid him, besides an annual pension of twenty BOO thousand florins; that a town, of which he was feudal fuperior, should be erected into a marenifate, and that he should have two regiments of troops to be distributed throughout his goveriments, in whatever stations he should think fit. Belides these enticements, another object was held forth to him, more tempting perhaps than any of the rest; he was flattered with the hopes of obtaining in marriage the countess of Megen, of whom he was greatly enamoured, and who possessed one of the richest fortunes in the Netherlands. His religious principles conspired with these allurements, and made him lend an open ear to his fifter's repeated representations of the danger to which the catholic faith was exposed, and of the defigns formed by the prince of Orange for its destruction. He hesitated however for some time, and trembled at the thoughts of the infamy in which he was about to be involved; but at last he consented to accept of the terms proposed, resolving to conceal his having done fo, till he should take proper measures for delivering the towns and forts into the hands of the Spaniards.

His design could not entirely escape the penetrating eye of the prince of Orange. Various circumstances concurred to alarm William's 5

appre-

BOOK XVII. apprehensions, and made him resolve, without delay, to prevent, if possible, the satal effects of the count's intended treachery. He instantly went into Friesland, under the pretence of quelling some disturbances in that country, and ordered some officers to draw their troops together, and lead them against Lewarden, Harlingen, and Staveren. These orders were executed with secrecy and dispatch, and all the three places were wrested out of the hands of those to whom count Renneberg committed them.

THE count, who resided at this time in Grohingen, was thunderstruck when he received intelligence of this difafter, which at once shewed him that his perfidy was detected; and put it in a great measure out of his power to fulfil his engagements to the prince of Parma. Still, however, he was either not prepared, or he had not courage, to throw off the mask. He complained loudly of the affront that had been offered him, and of the ingratitude with which his fervices had been repaid. Among the officers who beheld his confusion on this occasion, there were two to whom, as he knew their fidelity to the States to be inviolable, he had not communicated his designs. These men, thinking it still practicable to preserve him in his duty, exhorted him to go immediately

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

diately to the prince of Orange, in order to BOOK clear himself from the suspicions which were entertained against him. "This is the only expedient in your power, faid one of them, if you are conscious of innocence; nor can I doubt that you are, when I consider, that by perfifting to act the part which your duty and honour require, you must promote your interest more effectually, than by violating these facred obligations, and involving your name in perpetual infamy." Renneberg listened attentively to this discourse, changed colour frequently, and at last burst into tears. He repeated his complaints of the treatment which he had met with, but he would not explain his intentions, nor follow the counfel that was given him. The two officers then left him; and, after acquainting the chief magistrate of what had passed, they withdrew privately from the city. boys ned bal an monw slods ye move for his misformers on account of his r

By a popular and infinuating behaviour, accompanied with ftrong affeverations of the falsehood of the reports which had been propagated, Renneberg laid afleep the fuspicions both of the magistrates and the people, till the plot which he had formed was ripe for execution. Having brought in fecretly a body of troops, which he concealed in the palace, and put arms into the hands of his domestics; with these,

HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

352 BOOK XVII.

these, and the catholic inhabitants devoted to the Spanish interest, he overpowered the garrison; and having thus made himself master of the town, he proclaimed himself governor, in the name of Philip, and then mounted the fortifications with the troops which he had in-

Renneberg's remorfe and deaths troduced.

But he did not long enjoy any of the advantages which he expected to derive from his revolt, and some of them he never attained. The money promised him was never paid, and the countess of Megen was given in marriage to another. His health being impaired by the satigues which he had undergone in his military enterprises, the remembrance of his treachery filled his mind with anguish and remorse, which preyed upon his sickly frame, and carried him off in the prime of his age, lamented even by those whom he had betrayed, who selt for his missfortunes, on account of his many amiable accomplishments.

Election of

THE losses which the confederacy suffered from La Noue's imprisonment, and the insidelity of Renneberg, served only to confirm them in their resolution of conferring the sovereignty on some foreign prince; and the reasons above

& Grotius and Meteren.

mentioned,

mentioned, joined to the influence of the prince BOOK of Orange, determined the States of the feveral provinces and towns to give the preference to the duke of Anjou. The election was made accordingly in due form by the General States. and a folemn embaffy fent to give intimation of it to the duke, who readily accepted the offer, and confented to all the conditions that were required. They were contained in a treaty figned by him and the ambaffadors of the States at Pleffiles-Tours, on the 29th of September; and the principal articles were those which follow: " That the States of the United The condi-Provinces having elected Francis de Valois, duke of Alencon and Anjou, for their fovereign, did thereby confer upon him all the titles and prerogatives which their former princes had enjoyed. That in case the duke should die without issue, the States might elect another fovereign, and that the Netherlands should in no event be annexed to the crown of France. That in case the duke should die leaving feveral fons behind him, the States should have power to determine which of them should succeed him in the sovereignty, and that if he prince whom they should make choice of were under age, they might assume the government into their own hands till he should arrive at the age of twenty. That the duke should maintain inviolate all the rights Vol. II. Aa and

B O O K XVII.

and privileges of the people; that he should fummon the general affembly of the States to meet at least once a year; and that, if he should fail to iffue letters of convocation, they should themselves have power, agreeably to ancient form and custom, to meet together as often as they should judge expedient. That the duke should fix his residence in the Low Countries; but if his affairs should, on any occasion, call him thence, he should nominate for governor fome nobleman a native of the Netherlands, with the confent and approbation of the States. That all his counfellors should be natives of the provinces, except two or three of the French nation, who might be admitted into the council, provided the States should give their confent. That he should make no innovation in religion, but afford his protection equally to the protestants and catholics. That Holland and Zealand should, both in respect of government and religion, remain in their present state, being obliged, however, to contribute their proportion of the supplies requisite for the support of the confederacy. That the duke should spare no pains to engage his brother the king of France to affift him in carrying on the war; that he should accede to all the treaties that fublist between the States and foreign powers, and should not himself form any new alliance without their confent. That all foreign

foreign foldiers should be dismissed on the first BOOK requisition of the States: And lastly, That if the duke should fail in performing any of the foregoing conditions, his right to the fovereignty should cease, and the Provinces be no longer bound to yield obedience to his authority."

XVII. 1580.

As this treaty was negociated in France, Philip complained to Henry of the breach of friendship in permitting it; and Henry affected to be much offended with his brother's conduct, but in reality did not feel the displeasure which he pretended. On the contrary, he fecretly rejoiced in the prospect of being delivered from a brother, whose levity and caprice had given him much inquietude; and it is faid, that he affured the States privately, that he would fend them either troops or money, as foon as the troubles of his kingdom were composed.

Bur whatever reason Philip had to be offend- Philip's ed with the French monarch, he was much of the prince more highly incenfed against the prince of Orange, whom he confidered as the contriver, as well as the chief promoter, of the revolution that had taken place, Having oftener than. once attempted, by negociation and artifice, to free himself from an enemy, who had furnish-

proscription

Aa2

ed

B O O K XVII. ed employment to his ablest generals and best disciplined forces for so many years, he had recourse, on this occasion, to the ignoble expedient of exciting some wretch or desperado to make an attempt upon his life. For this purpose he published an edict of proscription against him, in which he accused him of having excited and fomented that spirit of discord, which had proved the fource of fo much mifery to the Netherlands; interdicted all the subjects of the crown of Spain from holding communication with him, and from supplying him with bread, or drink, or fire; and offered to any person, who should deliver him dead or alive, or take away his life, the fum of twenty-five thousand crowns, besides making him and his affociates noble, if they were not already noble, and granting them a full pardon of all crimes, however enormous, of which they had been guilty.

This practice of commanding affaffination, almost unheard of since the days of the Roman triumvirate, was suitable to the dark, revengeful, and ungenerous nature of Philip. The prince of Orange could have retaliated the injury; but he scorned so ignoble a revenge, and chose rather to rest his desence on an appeal to the world for his integrity.

His Vindication or Apology, addressed to BOOK the affembly of the States, and of which he fent copies to the feveral courts in Europe, is His Appeone of the most precious monuments of history. It contains an interesting relation of many particulars, which throw light, not only on William's own character and that of Philip, but likewise on the characters of several of the other principal actors in the Netherlands. The author has, in some parts of it, indulged himself in the language of keen refentment, and ventured to affert boldly feveral facts, of which the cotemporary historians have spoken with re-Some allowance perhaps must be made for that just indignation with which he was inflamed; but when it is considered, that no perfon had better access to information; that no prince possessed a higher character for sincerity and truth, having never, in a fingle instance, been convicted by his numerous enemies of infincerity and falsehood; that the relation of the facts which he afferts was published at the time when they are faid to have happened, and when it was easy for the persons accused, if accused unjustly, to have confuted him; that their interest and honour called loudly for a confutation; and yet, that no fuch confutation, nor any vindication of their characters, which had been arraigned as odious at the bar of the universe, was ever attempted; when all these Aa3 circum-

358

1580.

BOOK circumstances are duly considered, there does not appear any fufficient reason for calling in question the facts contained in this Apology, although fome of them are of fuch a nature as to require the strongest evidence to justify the reader for yielding his affent h.

Adopted by the States,

THE conduct of the confederated States on this occasion was fuch as William had reafon to expect. After employing feveral days in examining his Apology, they voted him an affectionate address, in which they attested the falsehood of those imputations on which Philip had founded his proscription. They declared, that as the prince had been regularly elected into the feveral offices which he held, fo he had never accepted of any office but in confequence of their most earnest intreaties. They prayed him still to exercise the authority with which they had invested him, expressed their gratitude for his many eminent fervices to the commonwealth, and promifed to yield a ready and cheerful obedience to his commands. They concluded with expressing their anxiety for his life, and made him an offer of maintaining a company of horse-guards, of which they intreated him to accept, being perfuaded that on his preservation their own security depended.

Dec. 17.

IN

h An abstract of his Apology is subjoined to the conclufion of this work.

1581.

In a few days afterwards they gave him an- BOOK other proof of that zeal and fincerity with which they had espoused his cause. Their Sole n reelection of the duke of Anjou was a virtual re- of their allenunciation of their allegiance to their former giance to Philip. fovereign; yet all public acts ran as before in the name of Philip and that of the States; the oath administered to persons entering upon public offices had not been altered, and the people in some of those cities in the confederacy, which had confented to Anjou's election, were extremely averse to alter it, from that attachment which men often discover to exterior forms, even after the inftitutions on which they were originally founded have been abolished; but the States, sensible at last of the incongruity between these forms and the steps which they had lately taken, and apprehensive of danger from leaving it in any respect ambiguous to whom the people owed their allegiance, agreed now to remove all ground of ambiguity by a folemn abjuration of Philip as their fovereign.

An act of abjuration was accordingly paffed, with great unanimity, in an affembly held on purpose at the Hague, confisting of deputies from Brabant, Guelderland, Zutphen, Flanders, Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Overyssel, and Friesland. In this act, after enumerating the Aa4

BOOK XVII. the principal grievances which had prompted them to form their present resolution, they declared it to be a right inherent in every free people, to withdraw their allegiance from a prince who obstinately refuses to fulfil the duty which he owes them; and much more from one who violates the fundamental laws, and acts the part of a tyrant and oppressor. They pronounced Philip to have forfeited for ever all authority in the Netherlands. They forbad all judges and others to use his name, arms, or feal; and they required the magistrates of towns, and all other persons in public offices, to bind themselves by an oath, to oppose him and his adherents to the utmost of their power.

THESE resolutions were carried into immediate execution. All Philip's seals were broken, all commissions and letters patent in his name were cancelled, and the new oath was administered to every person who possessed any civil or military employment. It was not without difficulty that the magistrates in some towns were persuaded to take this oath. Some remaining scruples of conscience, arising from a regard to their former oaths, gave uneasiness to several; and others doubted of the expediency of so strong a measure at the present criss, on account of the ships and merchandise belonging

to the people of the Netherlands, which were BOOK in the ports of Spain. But no pains were spared to remove these objections, and at last almost the whole inhabitants of the above-mentioned provinces entered into the views of the States and took the oath that was prescribed them i.

ABOUT this time Matthias left the Nether- Departure of lands, after having refided there between three and four years, without having acquired either reputation to himself, or any advantage to the people whom he had been called to govern. He had employed all his influence to perfuade the States to make choice of him for their fovereign; but the motives above explained having determined them to give the preference to the duke of Anjou, it should seem that the prince of Orange had been able to fatisfy Matthias as to the necessity of that measure, since he remained in the country for

Upon a representation of the prince of Orange, the States formed at this time several useful regulations relative to the administration of justice, to the finances, and the troops. That council of state likewise was established, of the necessity of which William had laboured to convince them, which was inflituted partly to remedy the inconveniences arising from the slowness with which the deliberations of the State were unavoidably conducted, and partly to serve as a check upon the future sovereign. Grotius An. l. iii. Meteren, &c.

BOOK XVII. a confiderable time afterwards, and accepted of an annual penfion of fifty thousand guilders from the States \*.

During the course of these civil and political transactions, the troops were not wholly unemployed. In Friesland, the king's forces were commanded by Schinch and Verdugo, between whom and colonel Norris and count Hohenloe several sharp rencounters passed, with various success; but the only important event which happened at this time in the northern provinces, was the acquisition of Breda, into which the Spaniards were treacherously admitted in the night by some of the garrison, whom the agents of the prince of Parma had found means to corrupt.

THE prince himself was, in the mean time, intent on the reduction of Cambray. But not having a sufficient number of troops to carry on the siege with vigor, he was obliged to convert it into a blockade. D'Inchi, the governor, had recourse for relief to the duke of

Matthias had afterwards a better fortune. His brother refigned to him the kingdom of Hungary in 1608, and that of Bohemia in 1611, and the year following he obtained the Imperial crown. Strada, lib. vii. Meteren p. 317.

<sup>1</sup> Meteren, p. 313.

#### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

363 BOOK

Anjou, and was warmly feconded in his application by the States and the prince of Orange. Anjou perceiving how deeply his honour was

concerned to gratify this first defire of his new fubjects, published at the court of France his intention of attempting to raife the fiege. This was no fooner known, than a great number of the nobility flocked from all parts of the kingdom, to his standard. With their assistance, he collected in a few days an army of near twelve thousand foot and four thousand horse. and marched directly towards Cambray. The prince of Parma, too prudent to contend with an army, which, befides being greatly fuperior to his own in number, was conducted by a brave and warlike nobility, quitted his intrenchments and retired. In this manner was Cambray delivered, after it had been blockaded for feveral months, during which the inhabitants had been reduced to great diffress. having brought along with him an ample fupply of provisions, it was immediately introduced; and foon after, he made a magnificent entry into the city, amidst the applauses of the people, who faluted him the protector of their Liberty. He then laid fiege to Cateau-Cambresis, and quickly compelled the garrison

to furrender ".

Meteren, p. 315. Bentivoglio, part if. lib. ii.

364 B O O K XVII.

1581.

THIS fuccess which attended Anjou's first enterprise, afforded inexpressible pleasure to the confederate provinces, and ferved to heighten their expectations of his future government. He was earnestly entreated by the States to improve the prefent opportunity, and to advance with his army towards Flanders. But it was not in his power, he told them, to comply with their request. All his troops but a few were volunteers, who had engaged in his fervice only for a short time, and for the single purpose of the relief of Cambray. He could not prevail upon them to remain with him much longer; and he had not yet provided money for their pay. But he hoped to return foon with a powerful army; and he would in the mean time employ his utmost influence to interest his brother and the queen of England in their cause.

Anjou folicits aid from his brother. THERE were not wanting powerful motives to induce the French king to grant Anjou that affiftance for which he now applied; fince, besides being delivered from the sickle, restless spirit of a brother, who had greatly increased the troubles of his reign, he would have thereby avenged himself of Philip, who had secretly undertaken the protection of the catholic league, which, as will be afterwards related, had been lately formed by the duke

1581.

of Guise, on pretence of providing for the BOOK fecurity of the catholic religion, but in reality to controul the fovereign's authority. But Henry was not in a condition at this time to make an open breach with Philip. By his indolence, and voluptuousness, added to the numberless calamities in which his kingdom was involved, his finances were exceedingly reduced; and the king of Navarre on the one hand, and the duke of Guise on the other, furnished more than sufficient employment to all the policy and power which he possessed. Promises therefore of future aid were all that Anjou could obtain from him, and this disappointment determined the duke to fet out immediately for England, where it should feem he had better ground to hope for affiftance than in his native country.

ELIZABETH had for some time past appeared to lend a favourable ear to a propofal of marriage which he had made to her; and his expectations were at present raised to the greatest height. On his arrival in England, she gave him the most gracious reception. Soon afterwards, she ordered her ministers to prepare the marriage contract; and, in the presence of many spectators, after a long discourse with

BOOK XVII.

1581.

with him apart, she took a ring from her own finger, and put it upon his; which both the spectators and the duke interpreted as a declaration of her confent. It is impossible to believe with some historians, that Elizabeth meant only to amuse Anjou, and thereby to advance some political design. It is inconceivable how any defign whatever could be promoted by carrying her diffimulation to fo great a length. This wife princess, notwithflanding the many extraordinary accomplishments which adorned her character, was not exempt from the weaknesses that are peculiarly incident to her fex. Flattered by the court which Anjou had long affiduously paid her, fhe appears to have entertained the most partial fentiments of affection towards him. and ferioufly to have intended to liften to his propofal. But at last her prudence, her ambition, and that love of independence which she had cherished through her whole life, prevailed over the temporary passion into which she had been betrayed. She made an apology to Anjou, for her change of refolution, and gave him the ftrongeft affurances of affiftance and support in his new dominions. The marriage was no more mentioned, and the duke, after the ftay of three months in England, fet fail for the Low

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

367

1581.

Low Countries; escorted by a fleet, on board BOOK which there was a great number of nobility and gentry, whom the queen had defired to attend him, as a proof to his new fubjects, that although the intended marriage had not taken place, yet she was deeply interested in his prosperity.

# RHILLPH RINGODESIAMS

429

Lass Constitute of the House these on board tides trivinging ton a ship and dista -ob bad costa on mode without in a viel formered anytometra as the second of the second the grade of the series that the configuration and the series had not maken place, you the was deeply in and the state of the same and any of the safe parties of the safe and the And the state of the state of the state of the ting the state of air to take to any how an issue on the factor of the responsible the responsible of the second state the state of the state of the state of giot para la recorda para esta estada al l working a form of the street of the street to the transfer to the house and the second second second After Resonance of the second state of

## HISTORY thought the for load time part been the

of the REIGN OF

# charches; and all catholics were allowed to PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN. the duke. At few persons only accepted o

# than to folentily remember 100 of a thro them,

this indifference, while the greater pair choic

reign. On this occasion the States, as well FTER a paffage of three days, the duke Book of Anjou landed on the tenth of February, at Flushing. From Flushing he went to Middleburgh, and was conducted from thence by a fleet of fifty ships of war to Antwerp. The banks of the Scheld, the entrance into the town, and the streets which led to the palace, were lined by the citizens, to the number of twenty thousand in arms; and no expence was faved, which a wealthy commercial city could afford, to express their attachment and respect. After having taken the usual oath to maintain their rights and privileges, he received from the States the oath of allegiance; and then en-Vol. II. tered

Anjou's arrival in the Netherlands

HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK

1582.

370

tered upon the fovereignty, while all around him wore the face of happiness and joy.

In Antwerp, the public exercise of the catholic religion had for some time past been pro-But now, in order to gratify the new fovereign, it was permitted in one of the churches; and all catholics were allowed to worship there, according to the rites of their religion, upon condition that they should abjure the king of Spain, and fwear allegiance to the duke. A few persons only accepted of this indulgence, while the greater part chose rather to forego the privilege held forth to them, than fo folemnly renounce their former fove-On this occasion the States, as well as the duke, were not a little alarmed; and thought it necessary without delay to provide against the danger that might arise from persons who gave so clear a discovery of their disaffection to the present establishment. They first published one edict, imposing a fine of two hundred guilders on those who should decline taking the oaths; and foon afterwards another, by which the recufants were banished from the Netherlands ..

Attempt to affaffinate the prince of Orange.

In the midst of these transactions, that joy which Anjou's arrival had diffused throughout

their atta

the States the cold of allegiance and the

II Jo Vthe

the provinces was interrupted, by an attempt BOOK which was made, not many days after his inauguration, upon the life of the prince of Orange. The defign was first conceived in Spain, by a man of the name of Ifonca; and it was suggested by him to Gaspar Anastro, a Spanish banker in Antwerp, of ruined circumstances, as an expedient for retrieving his af-To induce Anastro to undertake the execution of the bloody purpose, Isonca sent him a fign-manual of the king, in which Philip engaged to pay him eighty thousand ducats as foon as the affaffination should be perpetrate ed. Anastro had not courage himself to execute fo bold and desperate an enterprise, and therefore he communicated Isonca's proposal to John Jauregui, a menial fervant in his family, a young Biscayan, of a thoughtful, melancholy disposition, whom he knew to be both trusty and audacious. With this young man, Anastro found there was little need for persuafion. "I am ready, faid he, to perform instantly what the king so earnestly desires. I despise equally the proffered reward, and the danger to which I shall be exposed; for I know that I shall die. I only ask that you will assist me with your prayers to God, and employ your interest with the king, to provide for my father in his old age." Jauregui was the better qualified to fucceed in his defign, as he spoke B b 2 the

372

XVIII. 1582.

BOOK the German language fluently, and was in n danger of being known to be a Spaniard. He, was confirmed in his purpose by a priest of the name of Timmerman; from whom he received absolution of his fins, and the strongest affurances, that by putting to death fo great a heretic as the prince of Orange, he would infallibly fecure the favour of God and everlafting happiness about at orfinale mulmi of

instanto eda la moine

ly

UNDER a full conviction of the truth of what the priest had declared, this deluded wretch set out for the castle, and having taken his station near the door of the apartment in which the prince had dined, he watched the opportunity of his coming out; when stepping up to him, he discharged a pistol at his head, loaded with a fingle ball. The ball entered a little beneath his right ear, and passing under his palate and upper teeth, came out on the other fide. William was deprived for a moment of his fenses; which he no fooner recovered, than he defired his attendants to fave the life of the affaffin. But the guards, transported with sudden rage, had dispatched him. The appearance of the prince's wound, from the effusion of blood, was extremely formidable, and as he was deprived of his speech by the same cause, the spectators believed him to be at the point of death. The news of this disafter spread quickly over the town, and excited in all ranks of men, inexpressible anguish and despair. The citizens poured in crowds from every quarter to learn the particulars of that calamity which had befallen them; and, as if each individual had lost his own proper parent, as well as the common parent of the state, there was nothing to be heard but the voice of sorrow and lamentation.

that he had been a consection fanality.

B O O K XVIII.

In the midst of this distress, a rumour was propagated, that the French were the authors of the murder, and that it had been perpetrated in order to deliver the duke of Anjou from the restraints which had been imposed on his authority. This report gained easy credit from the people. Their grief was now converted into fury, and they sew to the palace with an intention to execute a speedy vengeance.

In the mean time it was known at the castle, that the affassin was a Spaniard, from papers found in his pocket, by Maurice, the prince's son of this discovery, notice was immediately carried to the prince, who had now recovered his speech; and he was informed, at the same time, of the danger to which Anjou

then quentical, and their i carts and limbs fried

Maurice was at this time only fifteen years of age, but was even then remarkable for his attention and fagacity.

BOOK XVIII.

and his countrymen were exposed. This intelligence affected William in the most fensible manner; and notwithstanding his present critical fituation; he wrote, with his own hand, a billet in exculpation of the French. By this, joined with the pains which were taken by St. Aldegonde, the people were undeceived and pacified. The affaffin's body having been exposed to public view, it was foon discovered that he had been a domestic of Anastro. tro himself had fled, but his secretary, whom he had left behind to wait the iffue of Jauregui's attempt, and Timmerman, the prieft, were feized, and having confessed their guilt, they were condemned to fuffer death. At the defire of the prince of Orange, who never neglected an opportunity of inculcating humaniry upon his countrymen, no tortures were inflicted on them. They were first strangled and then quartered, and their heads and limbs fixed over the gates of the city .

WILLIAM's recovery was dubious for some time, on account of the difficulty which the physicians found in stopping the essusion of

blood;

They remained there till the city fell into the hands of the prince of Parma, when they were taken down by the popish ecclesiastics, and buried with every mark of veneration which their superstition could devise.

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

blood; but after all their applications had fail- BOOK ed, they made a number of persons succeed one another in preffing the mouth of the wound with their thumbs, without intermission, for the space of several days and nights; and this expedient proved at length fuccessful.

375 XVIII.

> Reiven of diseased with

ANASTRO having gone from Antwerp to Tournay, where the prince of Parma then refided, affirmed confidently that William had died of his wound. Farnese too rashly believed him, and wrote letters to the citizens of Antwerp, and other places, exhorting them to return now to their duty, fince that person was removed by whom they had been led These letters would not have been calculated, in the present disposition of the people, to promote the prince of Parma's defign, even if the information on which he proceeded had been true; but as they did not arrive till after the people were delivered from their apprehensions with regard to William's life, they ferved only to excite their ridicule and indignation .

B b 4

MEANWHILE

d While his life was in danger, a public supplication was offered up to heaven for his recovery; and when it was accomplished, a folemn thanksgiving was cele-

Bentivoglio, p. 263. Meteren, p. 326. Thuanus, lib, lxxv.

376

BOOK XVIII. 1582. Return of the Spanish troops.

MEANWHILE the operations of the war were not discontinued by either of the contending parties. The States acquired possession of the town of Alloft, and the prince of Parma made himself master of Steenwick and Lierres. He was foon after enabled to act with greater vigour than the weakness of his army had hitherto permitted him to exert. Having confented with great reluctance to the difmission of the Italian and Spanish troops, he had employed all his address to convince the Walloons that it was in vain for them to expect, with their own forces alone, to bring the war to a conclusion. He found it extremely difficult to overcome their diffidence, and was obliged to observe the utmost caution, in order to avoid awakening those suspicions which they had long indulged against the Spaniards. At length, however, he accomplished his defign through the marquis de Roubais, who, as was mentioned above, had acted a principal part in promoting the reconcilement of the fouthern provinces. With this nobleman, Farnese had formed an intimate connexion, and had laboured affiduoully to make him fenfible how necessary it was that the troops should be permitted to return. The marquis, flattered with the familiarity to which he was admitted, and prompted by the view of advancing his credit with the king, yielded at last to the prince's folicitations, and

then

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

377 B O O K XVIII.

then employed his influence with the States for effectually, that they not only confented to the return of the forces, but even petitioned the king for it in the most earnest terms.

As nothing could be more acceptable to Philip than this application, orders were immediately fent to Italy for the march of four regiments of veterans, confifting of near ten thousand men; who, together with several thousand Burgundians and Germans, arrived in the Netherlands towards the end of the fummer one thousand five hundred and eighty-two. After the arrival of this reinforcement, the prince of Parma's army amounted to fixty thousand foot and four thousand horse; but finding it necessary to leave more than the half of that number in garrisons, he could keep only about thirty thousand in the field; and a part of these was employed in Friesland under Verdugo, while the rest were under his own immediate command in the fouthern provinces. With these last he took Cateau Cambresis, Ninove, Gaesbec, and feveral other places; he attacked the army of the States, which he compelled to retire under the cannon of Ghent; and then he laid fiege to Bruffels, but the feverity of the feafon, and the difficulty of finding provisions

Bentivoglio, p. 258.

B O O K XVIII. in a country which had been so long the seat of war, obliged him to desist from his attempt, and to put his troops into winter-quarters.

State of the confederacy.

THE United States, on the other hand, difcovered great alacrity and zeal in supporting their new established government. They raised their yearly revenue from two millions four hundred thousand, to four millions of guilders, with which they maintained, besides their native troops, a confiderable number of British, French, and German forces. But so great a proportion of these forces was necessary for defending the forts and towns, that no army could be affembled fufficient to contend with the enemy in the field, nor even to raife the fiege of any of those places which the prince of Parma attempted to fubdue. Thus the number of towns belonging to the confederates was daily diminished, while their acquisitions were few and inconsiderable. And, as the enemy was now much more formidable than before, they were filled with the most disquieting apprehensions when they looked forward to the opening of a new campaign. Anjou, who participated with them in the anxiety which so critical a fituation was fitted to excite, did every thing in his power to procure from France the

Anjou folici's affiftance from his brother.

Meteren, p. 334.

fuccours

### PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

fuccours which he had given them reason to BOO expect. After many delays, the duke de Montpenfier and mareschal Biron arrived in the Netherlands in the end of November, with between feven and eight thousand men, partly Swifs and partly French. With this reinforcement, under so able a general as Biron, Anjou perceived that he might retard the progress of the prince of Parma's arms, but that he could not hope either to expel him from his new conquests, or to bring the war to a conclusion: he therefore renewed his folicitations at the court of France, and endeavoured to engage his brother more heartily to espouse his cause.

liberations.

HENRY's counsellors were much divided in Henry's detheir opinions with regard to the measures proper to be purfued on this occasion. By some of them, the present opportunity was reprefented as the happiest that could offer for uniting the Netherlands to the crown of France. But, as these men did not intend to advance the interest of Anjou, they did not employ any argument addressed to Henry's friendship or generofity; and, inftead of exhorting him to afford his brother aid sufficient to establish himfelf fecurely in his new fovereignty, they advised him only to give him such affistance as might enable him to stop the progress of the Spanish arms. To this counsel they subjoin-

ed,

B O O K XVIII.

ed, that Henry ought to maintain a fleet in the Channel, and an army on the frontier of Luxemburg, in order to prevent the prince of Parma from receiving supplies from Spain or Italy. And in this posture, they faid, he ought to wait, without exposing his troops to the hazards of war, till the contending parties should exhaust their strength, when it would be easy for him to drive the Spaniards out of the Netherlands, and his brother and the States. in order to obtain his protection, would gladly accept of whatever terms he should think fit to impose. But such a plan, which the great abilities of Farnese would have disconcerted, was too refined, and required too much labour, patience, attention, and expence, to be relished by a prince fo indolent and voluptuous as Henry, who was so improvident of the future, and whose affairs were so exceedingly in-Sented as the happied that could volved.

Henry refuses to grant his request. He listened with less reluctance to a proposal made him by some others of his counsellors, who being well acquainted with his character, perceived that his hesitation proceeded in a great measure from the shame of deserting his brother, and that in reality he wished for a pretence to reject his application. These men, secret enemies to the duke, and partizans of Philip, whose money it was believed they had accepted,

accepted, were afraid to declare openly against BOOK a measure in which the heir-apparent of the crown, supported by the queen-mother, was so deeply interested. They affected to approve highly of the granting Anjou's request, provided the king could comply with it confiftently with the interest of his kingdom. But both the interest and honour of France, they thought, required that the States should previously agree, that, in the event of the duke's death without iffue, the king and his heirs should succeed him in the fovereignty of the Netherlands. They knew that the States would not confent to this condition. It was, however, proposed to them, and having met with that reception from them

which there was reason to expect, notice was foon afterwards fent to Anjou by the queenmother, and his other friends, of the unfuccessful iffue of their endeavours to serve him .

This disappointment, which rendered it im- Anjou's attempt on possible for him to fulfil the expectations of his Antwerp new subjects, was calculated to give him the paces, most fensible concern. A candid and grateful prince would have thought himself bound more strongly than ever to exert himself in their behalf; and, by a careful attention to their interests, joined to a faithful discharge of his

he possibled was utterly incompatible. Had Thuanus, lib. xxvii. c. ix. Meteren, lib. xi.

Dimos

other

8 0 0 K 1582.

other obligations, to atone for his failure in that engagement which he was unable to perform. Widely different were the fentiments which arose in the mind of the faithless ungenerous Amou. Apprehensive that the Flemings, difgusted on account of their difappointment in those hopes of affistance with which they had been deluded, might withdraw their allegiance from him, and reconcile themselves to their former fovereign; he resolved to prevent them from executing this delign, in cafe they should conceive it, and in violation of all the oaths which he had fworn fo lately, he formed a plan of depriving them of their liberty, by making himself master of all the towns into which his troops had already found, or could by force or stratagem find admission.

This strange delign, it is said, was first suggested to him by his partisans in France, in order to induce Henry to grant him the affiftance which he folicited; and it was ftrongly recommended by Fervaques, and other French nobility who had accompanied him to the Netherlands. These men were all real or pretended friends to Anjou, and affected to be deeply concerned for his honour, with which they perfuaded him, that fuch a limited authority as he possessed was utterly incompatible. they been his most inveterate enemies; they could

## PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

could not have advised him to a measure more Book likely to prove fatal to his interest. Yet this weak prince, without communicating his intention to Biron or Monpensier, who would have refused their consent, readily embraced the counsel that was given him, and immediately proceeded to deliberate with his advifers concerning the means of carrying it into execution h.

1583.

IT was agreed, that the French troops, in all the towns where they were quartered, should, under the pretence of a mutiny, take up arms, and expel the garrisons; and in this manner he got possession of Dunkirk, Dixmude, Dendremonde, and several other places; but his principal object was the city of Antwerp. It would have been in vain, he believed, to attempt making himself matter of so strong a place by open force, with fo fmall a number of his troops as were within the city; and therefore, in conjunction with his counfellors, he exerted all his ingenuity in contriving how force and artifice might be united. On this occasion, Fortune seemed to favour his design. Towards the middle of January, after the frost had continued for some time, the States fignified their intention to have his troops employed

tiber. At spenier, with so a uch feeming fince-Thuanus, 1. xxvii. c. 10. Meteren, p. 336.

384

BOOK XVIII, in an expedition against some of the enemy's towns in Friesland, which, on account of their wet situation, were accessible only in the time of frost. Anjou pretended to enter with great alacrity into this design. He immediately gave orders to have his troops conducted to the villages in the neighbourhood of Antwerp, where he held them ready to march upon the shortest notice; and, under various pretences, he brought to his court at Antwerp almost all the French noblesse, who had been dispersed throughout the Netherlands.

Being thus prepared, his plan was to feize upon the gate of Cronenburg, which lay next to the palace, with his body-guards, and to introduce his army filently in the night; but, on the day immediately preceding, an obscure report of his intention was circulated among the citizens, and a general alarm excited. prince of Orange and the magistrates thought it proper to inform the duke of this report, and proposed to hang up lights in the city, and to stretch chains across the streets and gates, in order to quiet the apprehensions of the people. Anjou could not, without confirming the fufpicions entertained against him, refuse his confent to this proposal; but as he possessed a confiderable share of his mother's duplicity and artifice, he affumed, with fo much feeming fince-The rity

fe

rity, the appearance of indignation against 800 K the authors of the report, accompanied with fuch ftrong professions of attachment to the Netherlands in general, and the city of Antwerp in particular, that not only the magistrates, but even the prince of Orange was almost perfuaded of his innocence. The streets however were barricaded, the whole town was illuminated, and many of the citizens were

under arms.

These circumstances having made it necesfary for Anjou to change his plan, he went early next morning to the prince of Orange's apartment in the castle, and after informing him that he had ordered his troops to be drawn. out for a general review before their departure for Friefland, he defired the prince to accompany him to the field. Whether William had still any fuspicion of his design is uncertain; but he declined complying with his request, alleging the badness of the day, and the state of his wound, as an excuse for his refusal; and he advised the duke to put off the review till fome future day, when the people would be entirely delivered from those apprehensions with which they were at present disquieted. Anjou pretended that he would comply with his advice, and left him; but foon afterwards he fent him notice, that, finding the day cleared VOL. II.

B O O K XVIII. up, he still resolved to hold the review, as he had at first intended. He then gave orders to remove the barricades in the street which leads to the gate of Ripdors, and set out, attended with a retinue in arms, amounting to between two and three hundred men.

almost perfusive of a

He had no fooner passed the gate and the draw-bridge, than his attendants sell, sword in hand, upon the guards, and having butchered some of then, obliged the rest to take shelter in the guard-house. The orders which he had sent to the camp had been punctually executed. The whole army was in motion, and seventeen companies of foot, six hundred lances, and sour troops of horse were at hand, and ready to enter the city. They rushed in impetuously; and, having set fire to some houses near the gate, as a signal for the rest of the troops to hasten forward, they spread themselves over the town, crying out, "May the mass slourish: the city is taken."

THE citizens had been in some measure freed from their apprehensions, by Anjou's protestations on the evening before; but they had not been put entirely off their guard. They slew instantly to arms, and quickly formed a close compacted body, of sufficient strength to make head against the enemy. Their number was soon

foon augmented by others, who flocked to their affiftance from every quarter of the city. None declined exposing themselves to danger, or trusted to others for their defence. They remembered the devastations which had been committed fome years before by the mutinous Spaniards, and were perfuaded, that they could not now avoid a repetition of the difasters which they then fuffered, by any other means, but by exerting their utmost vigour, and shewing, each man for himself, a contempt of danger. Animated therefore by the dread of that ruin with which their fortunes, their friends, their wives and children, were about to be overwhelmed; and fired with indignation against their ungrateful, perfidious enemy, they advanced with a degree of fury which the French troops were unable to withstand. Many of the French had entered the houses for the fake of plunder. These men were quickly surrounded by the citizens, and put to the fword i the rest were driven back towards the gate. There they expected, either to be supported by their friends from the camp, or to make their escape out of the city; but, having neglected to fecure the portcullis, the foldiers, who had shut themselves up in the guard-house, had sallied out and let it down. By this circumstance, the French were thrown into despair, and the resolution and spirit of the citizens augmented:

C c 2

The

BOOK XVIII.

1583.

The situation of the former was now truly deplorable: disappointed of that assistance from without, on which they had depended, and crowded together into a narrow space; while the citizens, who pursued, poured their shot upon them without a moment's intermission; they fell in heaps above one another, till the gate was choked with the dead and wounded.

THE citizens made next a desperate attack on a body of French troops who had mounted the rampart, and either put them to the fword, or tumbled them headlong from the wall. Of this scene, Anjou himself, and the Swifs troops, who had attempted in vain to burst open the gate, were spectators. At first he thought it was the citizens that were thrown down, and believed it must have been by accident that the portcullis had been shut. He could not suppose that the inhabitants, unaccustomed to the use of arms, could, in the space of an hour, have discomfitted so great a number of disciplined forces; but he was foon undeceived in his conjecture. The citizens, still inflamed with indignation, on account of his unprovoked, atrocious attempt, pointed their cannon towards the place where he flood, and killed a considerable number of the Swiss.

THE prince of Orange, who lodged in the castle, at the opposite end of the city, remained ignorant for fome time of what had paffed, and when intelligence of it was brought him. he at first believed it to be some accidental scuffle between the inhabitants and soldiers: but at last receiving more certain information of the truth, he fet out with a part of the garrison for the scene of action. In his way thither he met Fervaques advancing towards him with a body of French troops, which had been left behind in the palace. At the first onset, Fervaques himself was taken prisoner, and his troops disheartened by the loss of their commander, and still more by the consciousness of their treachery, were easily overcome. William then proceeded to the gate of Ripdorp, where he arrived in time to prevent the citizens from wrecking an ufeless, though merited, vengeance upon the prisoners.

NOTHING could be more affecting, fays an historian', whose information was derived from eye-witnesses, than the spectacle at the gate; the dead bodies piled one above another to a considerable height, and the wounded mingled with the dead, weltering in blood, uttering the most doleful lamentations, and struggling to disengage themselves from each other, or

Van Meteren.

Cc3

from

390

from the bodies of their flaughtered friends. At the prince's intercession the lives of all the prisoners were spared, and many of the wounded recovered, through the attention and tenderness of those to whose care they were committed.

helismache nieres ere e evente helicanation

THE number of the French found dead in different parts of the city, amounted to fifteen hundred, among whom were upwards of three hundred persons of distinction. And the prifoners, including those who surrendered to the prince of Orange, were computed at two thoufand. So great was the lofs which Anjou fustained from this ill-concerted enterprise; while only one hundred of the inhabitants were killed, and the fame number wounded. It would be impossible, notwithstanding the desperate bravery of the citizens, to account for this extreme disparity betwixt the loss on the one fide, and that on the other, were it not for a circumstance which one of the historians \$ has mentioned, that the French, either from negligence, or their general's confidence of fuccess, had brought very little ammunition with them, and, during the greatest part of the combat, stood exposed to the enemy's fire, without having any other weapon to defend them but their fwords.

BOOK XVIII.

It is easier to imagine than describe the confusion with which Anjou must have been overwhelmed, when he reflected on the egregious folly into which he had been betrayed. passed the night in a neighbouring fort called Berchem, where there was neither furniture nor provisions. From that place he wrote a letter to the senate of Antwerp, in which, after boafting abfurdly of the proofs which he had given of his attachment to the Netherlands, he fubjoined, That although the misfortune which had happened, had arisen from the unworthy treatment which he had met with, yet, he was deeply penetrated with forrow and repentance on account of it; that he still retained all his wonted affection towards them, and had fent them this letter, partly to enquire what were their intentions with respect to him, and partly to defire that they would fend him his papers, furniture, and fervants; hoping that these last, who were entirely innocent of what had been done, should not suffer any harm'.

To this letter the fenate made no return, but referred it to the confideration of the prince of Orange and the States; and in the mean time Anjou, being utterly destitute of every thing necessary for the support of his troops, left Berchem and directed his march towards

C C 4

Dendre-

B O O K XVIII,

Dendremonde. He intended to have gone this ther by the shortest road, but the citizens of Antwerp having fent a number of armed veffels to oppose his passage over the Scheld, he was obliged to turn back, and to fetch a compass round by Duffel, Mechlin, Rimenant, and Vilvorden. In this march, besides suffering the greatest hardships in his own person, he lost a considerable number of his troops by an inundation of the river Nethe, From Duffel he wrote letters to the governors of Bruffels, and other places, in which he threw the whole blame of what had happened on the inhabitants of Antwerp, and represented the affair as a tumult, in which his troops, when upon their way to the camp, had interfered, but which had arisen in consequence of the ill usage which he himself had received. This disingenuous conduct served to exasperate the people of Antwerp more than ever against him, and they published a vindication of their conduct, fetting forth, "That they had in all respects demeaned themselves towards him as became good and faithful fubjects, They had given him even more than their proportion of the supplies, and had raised the sum of seventy thousand guilders; which, instead of applying it to pay the arrears due to the army, he had distributed among his French and Swiss troops to encourage them in their late atrocious attempt,

# PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

tempt. Nothing could be more palpably un- BOOK just than to impute that attempt to the citizens of Antwerp, fince, on the same day, the French troops had offered the fame violence in other places, By the kind providence of Heaven, the plan concerted to enflave them, had been frustrated, in such towns as were of the greatest importance; and it was their earnest prayer, that the duke might become sensible of the iniquity of his conduct, and refolve for the future to govern the provinces conformably to those fundamental laws of the constitution. which, at his accession, he had solemnly sworn to observe."

THE news of what had happened, having been quickly diffused throughout the provinces, excited universal astonishment and indignation. The prince of Parma, defirous to improve the opportunity which was prefented to him, attempted to reconcile the people to their ancient government, But his endeavours were not more fuccefsful now than formerly. The confederates were deaf to his proposals; and even refused to appoint ambassadors to treat with him concerning peace,

THE States in the mean time were delibera- Deliberating concerning the letter which Anjou had stions of the written to the fenate of Antwerp. Had they

liftened

# HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

394

OOK liftened to that just resentment with which they were inflamed, they would not have hefitated to declare that he had forfeited the fovereignty. But they considered how extremely critical their fituation was become, while Anjou was mafter of feveral of their fortified towns, and the prince of Parma hovered round them with an army, against which they were unable to contend. In this perplexity they intreated the prince of Orange, who had hitherto remained filent, to affift them with his counsel. person felt more sensibly for the distress into which Anjou's temerity had plunged the confederacy; and no person had a juster ground of provocation. It was by his means chiefly that Anjou had obtained the fovereignty; and yet it could not be doubted, that in fending Fervaques with troops to the castle, as above related, the intention was to deprive him either of his life or of his liberty, Notwithstanding this, William had at first interposed to prevent the citizens from using any violence against the prisoners; and he now gave the following conciliatory advice to the States in writing, as he generally did in matters which he deemed of high importance.

> IT was not, he faid, without reluctance, that he had refolved to deliver his opinion on the difficult question which was now before them,

1583.

them, as it had of late been the practice of 300 k many persons to blame him for every mistortune that had befallen the confederacy. Even if he had been invested with absolute authority. their censure would have been unjust, since the iffues of things belong to God only, and no man can answer for the success of the best concerted enterprise. Considering his age, and the injustice with which he had been treated. it would be prudent perhaps not to expose himfelf again to the obloquy of his detractors. But his concern for the prosperity of the Netherlands would not fuffer him to maintain that filence, which a regard to his personal ease and fecurity required; especially as they affured him that they would take in good part, and interpret favourably, whatever counsel he should offer.

Nothing was farther from his intention than to attempt to justify that atrocious violence which had been lately perpetrated: on the contrary, he thought the conduct of the duke had been fuch as proved beyond a possibility of doubt, that he had forfeited his title to the fovereignty. Notwithstanding this, no perfon, he believed, who fuffered himself to confider attentively the course of events fince their first connexion with the duke, would deny that this connexion had been attended

with advantages. By his troops, not only the siege of Cambray, but that of Lochem too, had been raised, and the whole province of Guelderland thereby faved from the depredations of the enemy. In consequence of his election, peace had been established between the catholics. and protestants in France, and the latter left at liberty to enter into the fervice of the States. Not to mention what they ought perhaps to prize more than any thing elfe, that, by electing the duke for their fovereign, not only the authority, but the name and arms of Spain, had been abolished in the Netherlands, and a foundation laid, upon which their liberty might be firmly established, provided they should exert themselves with their wonted zeal and vigour. When these things were considered, there would not appear much ground for the censures passed on those by whom the duke's election had been promoted. But whether they had judged wifely or unwifely, the States must now resolve either to make peace with the king of Spain, or trust for the future to their own strength, or enter into terms of accommodation with the duke.

WITH regard to the first of these, he obferved, that besides that all the same reasons still fublisted against returning under the Spanish yoke, which had formerly determined them to shake

shake it off; it must appear preposterous to BOOK think of reconciling themselves as subjects to a prince, whose name and ensigns were obliterated, and whose authority they had so solemnly renounced. There was truth in what some persons (friends of Spain more than their native country) had fuggested, that it was more defirable for the people of the Low Countries to be subject to a distant, than to a neighbouring prince, as it must be more difficult for the former, than for the latter, to encroach upon their liberty. But this maxim could not, in the present divided state of the Netherlands, be urged in favour of the dominion of the king of Spain; who, besides possessing a powerful army ready to overwhelm them, was absolute master of several of the provinces; and was therefore, in reality, much nearer to the confederacy than any other prince.

PROMPTED by this and other considerations, they had bestowed the sovereignty on the duke of Anjou; and be, it could not be denied, had forfeited his title to it. This was acknowledged even by the duke himfelf, who was now fensible of his folly. But notwithstanding his repentance, there was much ground to doubt of the expediency of entering into a fecond agreement with one by whom the first had been so grossly violated. There was ground to dread that

# 0 0 K XVIII. that the same evil counsellors, by whom the duke had been once deluded, might again deceive him; and there was reason to suspect, that considence could not be soon restored between the French troops and the people of the Netherlands.

tive country) had furgefled, that it was more

On the other hand, he thought it his duty to call their attention to the confequences which must attend their refusing to be pacified. The duke would deliver all the fortified towns which he possessed, into the hands of the Spa-Both he and his brother, the king of France, would from friends be converted into the most bitter enemies; from whom all that mischief might be expected, that can be contrived and executed by those who are stimulated by ambition, and inflamed with animolity and resentment. An immediate stop would be put by the French king to their commerce with his subjects; and while he would shut his harbours against their ships, he would open a passage through his dominions for the troops of the king of Spain. Even the queen of England, though highly diffatisfied with the duke's conduct, yet were she to be informed that the States had obstinately refused to be reconciled, would be exceedingly offended. And if they fhould lofe her favour, as well as that of France, to what other friend could they have recourse. either

either able or willing to support them? They BOOK must for the future trust for their preservation entirely to themselves. They must, without delay, make a numerous augmentation of their forces; and yet he knew not where these forces could be raifed, fince the devastation of the war had been fo great in every province of the confederacy, that scarcely a sufficient number of the people remained, to carry on their trade and manufactures. In order to maintain fuch an army as was necessary, much larger fums of money were requisite, than had hitherto been collected. What these were, would appear from the scheme which he now delivered to them, containing a particular description of all the ordinary and extraordinary expences of the war. From the difficulty which they had experienced in procuring money for paying the garrifons alone, they might judge whether they were poffesfed of funds adequate to the expence both of these and of an army in the field; without which, it was impossible that they could for any confiderable time relift the

HE was far from censuring those who advised them to trust to the Almighty for protection. The counsel of these persons was pious and well intended; but he thought, that to engage in any difficult enterprise without the means

390

BOOK XVIII. means of carrying it into execution, was more properly to tempt the Divine Providence than to trust in it; and that those only could be faid to exercise a proper trust in God, who, after embracing the most favourable opportunities of action, had recourse to Heaven by prayer, to crown their undertakings with success. It behoved them therefore still attentively to consider their strength and their resources; and if, without foreign assistance, they should find them sufficient for the purposes which they had in view, they would, in his opinion, judge wisely in resolving to retain the sovereignty in their own hands.

There was a time when the people of the Netherlands might have established themselves in this happy state of freedom and independence; when, in spite of the king of Spain, they might have expelled his brother John of Austria from the provinces. But our present situation, continued William, is widely different from what it was at the time of which I speak. A powerful Spanish army, seconded by those who were then our friends, is at our gates. The strength of the consederacy is impaired. Even with the assistance of the French troops, we have been unable to stop the progress of the enemy. If nevertheless you shall, upon inquiry, find that you are able, by mak-

ing

ing greater exertions, to do more alone, than BOOK when you were affifted by others, banish for ever all thoughts of an accommodation with the duke, and refolve henceforth, alone and unaffifted, to oppose both him and the Spaniards. Proceed instantly to the execution of your defign. But I dread that before you can make the preparations necessary for entering upon action, before you car collect either the troops or the money requifite, and even before you can appoint a general to command your forces, many of your towns will be taken; and many of them, despairing of relief, will enter into terms of accommodation with the Spaniards. For these reasons you will judge, perhaps, that in your present circumstances the wifest resolution which you can form, is to enter into a treaty of reconcilement with the duke. And if this shall be the result of your deliberations, I have only one other counsel to fuggest, which is, to give particular attention in your new agreement to prevent the fortified towns from being exposed on any future occasion to that danger from which the city of Antwerp has so narrowly escaped; and for this purpose to require, that no officer or foldier shall be admitted into garrisons without taking an oath of allegiance and fidelity to the States "."

Van Meteren and Thuanus.

VOL. II.

Dd

THIS

402

BOOK XVIII.

Reconcilement of the States with Anjou. March 8 h.

This reasoning of the prince of Orange produced the defired effect upon a great majority of the deputies, and a negociation was immediately begun, and foon afterwards a treaty of peace and reconciliation was concluded on the following conditions: That all the French prifoners in Antwerp should be set at liberty, the duke's papers and other effects restored, and ninety thousand guilders given him for discharging the arrears due to his troops. That he should deliver up all the towns which he had feized, retire to Dunkirk with four hundred foot and three hundred horse, and remain there till every point of difference should be entirely fettled; that he should renew the oath which he took at his inauguration, to govern the provinces according to the fundamental laws, and that all his troops should take an oath of allegiance to the States, binding themselves to ferve them faithfully against their enemies, and never to be concerned in any attempt to the prejudice of their authority.

Attempts on the life of the p-ince of Orange, As in promoting this agreement the prince of Orange appears to have acted under a conviction, that there was no other expedient by which the confederacy could be faved from ruin; fo, in being able to perfuade the States to adopt it, he gave the most convincing proof of his unlimited influence over that affembly. The people

people in general, especially in Flanders and Book Brabant, were extremely averse to any accommodation. Their hereditary antipathy against the French had, on this occasion, risen to the greatest height. Many of the deputies too were animated with the same aversion and refentment; nor can it be doubted, that if they had not been prevented by that deference which they had been long accustomed to entertain for William's opinion, they would have proceeded against Anjou to the utmost extremities, and have refolved never more to acknowledge his authority. The Spaniards were not ignorant by whom the States had been prevented from forming this resolution; and they were now convinced, that, till the prince of Orange were removed, no event, however promifing, would induce the confederates to return to their allegiance. They had recourse therefore to the dishonourable means of private affassination; and to attempt it, different persons were instigated about this time by Philip or his ministers : one of them by Philip himself, according to the declaration of the criminal; but more probably, by his ministers at Madrid: another by his ambassador at the court of France; and a third by the marquis de Roubais and the prince of Parma. The conspiracy of the two former was detected, and they fuffered death; and the last, a French officer, whom Roubais had taken pri-Dd 2 foner,

BOOK XVIII.

2583.

foner, and who had pretended to agree to the proposal, in order to procure his liberty, gave information to William's friends of the arguments which had been employed to persuade him, and shewed by his conduct afterwards in the service of the States, the sincerity of his abhorrence of that unhallowed deed which he had been solicited to perform?

Discontents of the peo-

THE danger to which the prince was fo often exposed from the inveterate resentment of the Spaniards, ought to have endeared his perfon and councils to his countrymen, and they produced this effect in a high degree upon all those who were able to comprehend the wisdom and moderation with which he had conducted their affairs. But great numbers having formed their judgment of Anjou's election to the fovereignty, from the late unhappy confequences with which it had been accompanied, could not refrain from afcribing some finister intention to those who had been active in promoting it. They were incapable of difcerning the strength of the motives by which William had been prompted to advise the States to renew their agreement, and they even fostered suspicions of his having attached himfelf to the duke, with a view to the attaining of some private

P Meteren, p. 348.

advantage.

advantage. This spirit of discontent was not BOOK confined to the vulgar, but likewise infected feveral of the deputies of the States, who became fullen and refractory; and by their contentious opposition to almost every measure that was proposed, disturbed and retarded the deliberations of that affembly. A great majority, however, of the members agreed to employ the French and Swifs troops under marefchal Biron, whom the duke had appointed to command them. Biron having not only had no concern in the attempt upon Antwerp, but having been considered by Anjou as one by whom it would have been opposed, was the most unexceptionable person to whom the command could have been committed, and he had been long distinguished for his military skill and experience. At first his arms were attended with fuccess. He compelled the fort of Wouda to furrender, and with inferior forces he repulsed the prince of Parma, who had attacked his lines near the town of Rosendal. But it was imposfible for him with fo fmall an army to stop the progress of the Spaniards in other places, or to face them in the open field. Farnese therefore pushed his conquests with great rapidity, and made himself master of Endove, Diest, and Westerlo, while he practised every art of negociation and intrigue against Bruges, Ghent, and other places.

Dd 3

DURING

BOOK XVIII. During the course of these transactions the duke of Anjou fell into a lingering illness at Dunkirk, which was generally supposed to be the effect of those hardships which he suffered in his retreat from Antwerp. Whether he believed himself insecure in his present situation, while the prince of Parma was fo brifkly carrying on his conquests in the neighbourhood, or found that his health required a change of air, and a relaxation from the fatigues of business, or whether he had conceived hopes at this time of obtaining, by a personal interview with his brother, more powerful affiftance than he had hitherto received, does not appear with fufficient evidence. But whatever was the motive which determined him, he left Dunkirk, and fet out for France.

Progress of the prince of Parma's arms. The prince of Parma was no fooner informed of his departure, than he quitted Herentals, and led his troops to Dunkirk. The States, aware of the importance of that place, ordered marshal Biron to march with all his forces to its relief. But such was the resentment which the Ghentese and other Flemings had conceived against the French, that no consideration could prevail upon them to suffer Biron to pass through their territories. They had resolved, they said, never to accede to the late agreement with the duke, whom they could not trust,

trust, and they would not be indebted to his BOOK troops for their defence. The confequence to be expected followed. The garrison of Dunkirk, which confifted wholly of French, gave up the town in a few days to the prince of Par-He then laid fiege to Nieuport, and took it with so much facility, as gave ground for a fuspicion of treachery on the part of the garrifon. He intended next to have invested Oftend, but having learnt that the prince of Orange had taken particular pains to provide for its fecurity, he relinquished his design; and having turned his arms against Dixmude and Meningen, he subdued these and several other places with a degree of celerity with which the people of the Netherlands had never been accustomed to fee any military enterprises carried on. But his fuccess served only to dazzle and confound the confederates, instead of opening their eyes to the fatal confequences of that discord which had exposed so great a number of their affociates an easy prey to the Spaniards. Except augmenting the garrisons of two or three towns, in the prefervation of which some of the deputies were perfonally interested, no vigorous resolution of any confequence was formed by the States, although they held their fessions daily, and were daily alarmed with fresh accounts of fome new loss which the confederacy had fuftained.

Dd 4

ABOUT

BOOK XVIII.

Injurious fulpicions against the prince of Orange.

ABOUT this time an incident fell out at Antwerp which strongly marks the spirit by which the Flemings were actuated on this occafion. The prince of Orange having given orders for building an additional rampart for the greater fecurity of the caftle, some fecret partifans of Spain took occasion from thence to infinuate, that he intended to deliver that fortress to the French, and was now preparing it for their reception. The people too easily believed this injurious fuggestion; and having taken up arms, they ran tumultuously to the castle, with a resolution to expel the garrison. liam immediately presented himself before them. The fight of a person whom they had been fo long accustomed to revere, joined to the evidence which they received on the spot, of the utter falsehood of that report which they had fo rashly credited, appealed the fury of the greater number, and quelled the tumult. But there were fome among them more audacious and malignant than the rest, who called him by the contumelious names of deferter and traitor of his country. This treatment, fo unmerited from a people whom he had faved from ruin, affected him in the most sensible manner. He admonished the magistrates to take cognifance of the licentiousness of which they had been spectators. But finding, that, on account of the great number of the guilty, they

# PHILIP IL KING OF SPAIN.

they were afraid to exercise their authority, he BOOK left Antwerp, and retired into Zealand, after having delivered directions to the magistrates H. 1583. in writing, for the government and defence of July 22. the city, and nominated the Sieur de St. Aldegonde, chief magistrate, or governor, for the ensuing year 4.

WILLIAM did not intend by changing the place of his residence to withdraw his attention from the fouthern provinces. He interested himself as much as ever in their affairs, and meant only to provide for his own fecurity, and to remove the affembly of the States (which was fummoned to meet at Middleburg) to a fituation in which the deputies would not be so much

9 Of the affection of the maritime provinces towards the prince of Orange, and of the trust and confidence which they reposed in him, he received about this time a conspicuous proof, by a refolution into which all the cities entered, except two, of creating him earl of Holland and Zealand, with all the powers and privileges which belonged to that ancient dignity. How far the prince himself contributed to their forming this refolution, does not appear from the cotemporary historians. It did not contradict the treaty between the United States and the duke of Anjou; as, by that treaty, the maritime provinces had only bound themselves to contribute their share of the public expences. Yet it was matter of some obloquy against the prince, of whom it was faid, that he had not been inattentive to his private interest.

influenced

# HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

410

XVIII.

influenced by the emiffaries of Spain, nor fo much diffurbed in their deliberations by the tumultuous disposition of the people. He still employed all his interest to reconcile the cities of Brabant and Flanders to the continuance of the French troops in the Netherlands, his endeavours proved effectual with Bruffels, and some other towns which lay nearest to the enemy; but Ghent, and most of the other cities, remained as inflexible as ever, and refolved never to admit the French within their territories, or to be indebted to them for protection. The States therefore found it necesfary to give orders for the departure of these troops, at a time when every friend of his country, who fuffered himfelf to reflect on the critical fituation of the confederacy, thought that the provinces ought rather to have made concessions to Anjou and the French king, in order to induce the latter to augment their num-Biron put them on board transports at Birvliet, and thence conducted them by fea to France.

August 27.

THE Spaniards were now at liberty to purfue their conquests almost without opposition. Farnese immediately formed the blockade of Ipres. Allost was sold to him by an English and Walloon garrison for the payment of their arrears. The country of Waes, and the town of Ruplemonde on the Scheld, were fubdued, 800 K and Zutphen too was taken by furprise; the confequence of which was, that the Veluwe, an extensive territory, between the Isfel and the Rhine, was laid open to the incursions of the enemy,

1583.

In the mean time the fecret partizans of Spain were daily increasing in Bruges, Ghent, and other places. Many persons had declared themselves against Anjou with so much violence, that they dreaded his return. Many were intimidated by the rapidity of the prince of Parma's conquests. Some having been intrusted with the public money, were afraid of being called to account for their management of it by the prince of Orange and the States, and all of them were allured to their first allegiance by the moderation with which Farnese treated fuch as had already fubmitted to him, and the strict fidelity with which he adhered to his engagements.

Among the persons who, prompted by these motives, were defirous of again reducing their country under the Spanish government, the prince of Orange had the mortification to find his brother-in-law, count Heremberg. This nobleman, weak, inconstant, and governed by his wife, who was the prince's fifter, but had

for.

B O O R XVIII. for some time been at variance with her brother, had formed the design of delivering the province of Guelderland, of which he had been appointed governor, into the hands of the Spaniards. His plot having been detected before it was ripe for execution, he was seized and imprisoned by an order of the States. But having been afterwards set at liberty upon his parole, he gave irrefragable proof of his guilt by slying over to the enemy.

Treachery
of the
prince of
Chimai.

THE prince of Chimai's intrigues in Flanders were more successful than those of Heremberg. He was eldest son of the duke D'Arschot, and had been educated in the catholic faith, but fome time before the prefent period, he had openly professed the reformed religion, and attached himself with much apparent zeal to the party of the prince of Orange and the States. Conscious that both his religion and patriotism were mere grimace, he had laboured with confummate artifice to remove any fufpicions that might be entertained of his fincerity. He was perpetually furrounded with the protestant ministers, with whom he lived on the most familiar terms; and he published an apology for his conduct, in which, with the highest encomiums on the protestant faith, he mingled the bitterest invectives against Philip, bestowing on him every reproachful epither which

# PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN

which the most implacable hatred could sug- 800 k geft. By these means he had infinuated himfelf into the favour of great numbers of the protestants, and particularly those of Bruges, who conferred upon him the government of their town. The prince of Orange, having received information of a fecret correspondence which he held with the catholics, had at first attempted to diffuade the people of Bruges from electing him their governor, and he now gave fecret instructions to the magistrates, to employ colonel Boyd, a Scotch officer, who commanded one of the regiments in garrison, to deprive Chimai of his authority. affected to enter heartily into the plan proposed, but he betrayed the magistrates, and gave immediate information of their delign to Chimai; who, through an artful misrepresentation of their conduct, was enabled to expel them from the city. He then put others into their place who were devoted to his interest, and still pretended all his wonted zeal for the reformed religion, till, having obliged many of the principal citizens to withdraw, he made himself master of the town, and then delivered it to the prince of Parma, May. upon condition that the prince should confer upon him the government of the province. To the obtaining of this request, which was granted by Farnese, and confirmed by Philip, Chimai thought himself the better intitled, as he had contributed in the fame perfidious man-

ner

BOOK XVIII. ner to the reduction of Ipres, which, after ablockade of nine months, had lately been obliged to furrender. Not long after this he threw off the mask of religion, and both he and one of the protestant ministers, who had been a principal instrument of his deceit, publickly abjured Calvinism, and declared themselves converts to the popish faith.

An attempt of the same nature with that of Chimai on Bruges was made by Imbise, and other agents of Farnese, to reduce Ghent and Dendremonde under the Spanish power. In order to second their endeavours, the prince of Parma had pitched his camp between Ghent and Bruges; but the plan which had been formed for the surprise of Dendremonde was discovered, and Imbise, the principal contriver, who was chief magistrate of Ghent, a factious and turbulent old man, was condemned and executed.

Death of Anjou.

During these transactions, the prince of Orange was employed in establishing a thorough reconcilement between the States and the Duke of Anjou, whose return with a numerous army William considered as the only remedy for the increasing calamities of the commonwealth. There was more reason now than ever to expect that Anjou would soon be able to sulfil his en-

Meteren, p. 357. Thuanus, lib. Ixxix. c. xv. gagements.

# PHILIP II. KING OF SPAIN.

gagements. Through the queen-mother's in- 300 K tercession, Henry had openly declared his refolution to exert himfelf with vigour in the fupport of his brother's interest in the Netherlands. An ambassador had been sent by the States to congratulate with the duke on this defirable event, and to acquaint him of their having confented to certain conditions which he had proposed. His joy on this occasion was extreme, and he now indulged the most flattering expectations; but he did not long furvive these events, which gave him so much pleasure. Having never enjoyed perfect health fince the hardships which he underwent in his retreat from Antwerp, he was feized about this time with an illness which might have been Beginning eafily accounted for, from the unfound state of of June. his constitution; but which, agreeably to the practice of the age, was attributed to poison . Whatever was the cause, he died in great pain. at Chateau-Thierry, on the 10th of June, 1584, at the age of thirty.

Such was the conclusion of the restless life of His charges this prince; whose weaknesses and vices were terequally pernicious to himself, to the Netherlands, and to France. Improvident of the fu-

It was supposed to have been given him by his phyfician, bribed by the court of Spain.

416

# 0 0 R WITH.

ture, and unable to judge for himfelf, he was a flave to the felfish purposes of others, as well as to his own humour and caprice. He feems likewife to have been incapable of difcerning the merit or demerit of those who approached him, or the foundness or folly of the counfels which they offered. He was not void of friend-Thip or attachment, and he was active and ambitious; but he was entirely destitute of that patience, fleadiness, and resolution, which are necessary in carrying on any important enterprife; and his conduct towards the United Provinces above related, too clearly justifies what was faid of him by his fifter Margaret, that if fraud and infidelity were to be banished from the earth, there was in him a flock fufficient from which it might be foon replenished P.

Affaffination of the prince of Orange.

YET his death, at the present criss, was a real calamity to the people of the United Provinces; but the memory of it was soon effaced by a much greater calamity, which in a few weeks afterwards befel them, in the death of the prince of Orange; against whom one of those atrocious attempts, to which Philip's profeription gave birth, proved at last successful. It was planned, and afterwards executed in Delft, by Balthazar Gerard, a native of Ville-

W

0

H

P Bentivoglio, 275. Davila, 1. vi. &c.

when

fans in Burgundy. This man, in order to fa- BOOK cilitate his admission into the prince's presence. had called himself the son of a French protestant, of the name of Guion, who had suffered for the fake of his religion. By this fictitious account of his extraction, joined to an artful affectation of zeal for the reformed religion and the fervice of the States, he became known to the prince; and William was fo far deceived by this impostor, that he put him into the train of an ambassador to the court of France. This mark of confidence did not divert him from his ungenerous defign; on the contrary, he had no fooner returned from France, than he refolved to carry it into execution; and he would have done fo, as he afterwards declared, on his first arrival, when he was admitted with letters into the prince's apartment, if he had not neglected to furnish himself with arms. But in a few days after, having returned to the palace, on the pretence of applying for a paffport, he placed himself at the door of that apartment, in which the prince was at dinner with his wife Louisa de Cologni, and his sister the countess of Scwartzenburgh, and waited there, with a cloak cast round him, till they were retiring into another room. The princess observing him look confused and pale, was greatly alarmed, and enquired what he wanted. He comes for a paffport, answered the prince;

VOL. II.

1584.

Tuly soth.

BOOK when the affaffin, stepping forward, shot him in the body with a piftol loaded with three balls. William had time only to fay, " God have mercy on me, and this afflicted people: I am grievously wounded." Immediately after which he fell down, and in a few moments afterwards expired ; the princess, overwhelmed with anguish, looking on; whose peculiar fate it was to fee her fecond husband murdered, as her illustrious father, and her first husband, the amiable Teligni, had been, in the maffacre of Paris, some years before.

> THE murderer in the mean time had made his escape out of the palace by a back-door, and had almost reached the ramparts. He was preparing to throw himself into the ditch, which was full of water, in the hopes of being able to

fwim over, when he was overtaken by two of

the prince's guards.

Upon his first examination he declared, that, fix years before the prefent period, he had formed the delign of putting the prince to death; that he had then been deterred from his purpose by his friends; that he had again refumed it, when the king published his edict of profcription; that having been in the fervice of Du Pré, secretary to count Mansveldt, he had procured from him some blank subscrip-

In the fifty-second year of his age.

But in a Yelv days at

tions of the count's, which, in order to gain BOOK eredit, he had delivered to the prince; that he had communicated his design to four jesuits in Treves and Tournay, who affured him, that if he should die in the execution of it, he would be deemed a martyr by the church.

soon received his nameral forting

To these circumstances, after the torture was applied, he subjoined, that the reward promised in the proscription had been his principal motive; that he had made known his purpose to the prince of Parma, and had been defired by him to converse with his secretary, Christopher Assonville; that Assonville had defired him to reflect on the difficulties which he must encounter; but had assured him, that he could not perform a more acceptable fervice either to the king or the prince of Parma; that he might depend with perfect fecurity, upon receiving the money promifed in the king's edict of profcription; but exhorted him repeatedly to deny, in case of his being seized, that the prince of Parma had approved of his defign; although the prince, he faid, had in reality approved of it, and had confented to his using the blank subscriptions.

WHEN he was informed of the fentence pronounced against him, in which it was ordained, that his right hand should be burnt off, and

Ee 2

8

BOOK XVIII. the flesh of his body torn from the bones with burning pincers, he was at first thrown into the most dreadful consternation, and lamented bitterly that he had fuffered the thirst of wealth to betray him into an action, which had plunged him into fuch intolerable mifery; but he foon recovered his natural fortitude, and faid, that, far from repenting of what he had done, he was conscious of having merited the favour of God, and was fure of being admitted into a state of eternal happiness. And in this temper, of mind he remained, both in the interval before his execution, and in the time of it, during which he exhibited a degree of composure and tranquillity that filled the spectators with astonishment.

The highest encomiums were bestowed on this deluded wretch by the popish ecclesiastics in the southern provinces; and in many cities they would have lighted up bonsires, and celebrated public rejoicings, if the consent of the people could have been obtained; but even the prince of Parma's troops resuled to join in these rejoicings, and openly declared their condemnation of an act, which they sound repugnant to the dictates of their hearts, whatever might be said in justification of it, on the principles of crooked politics, or the popish saith.

It will be unnecessary to inform the reader of the grief and consternation, which this melancholy event disfused throughout the confederated provinces. Each person mourned as for his parent, his guardian, and friend, and selt for the loss which the State had sustained, as men are wont to feel for their private and domestic calamities. Being now deprived of the person whose wisdom had, for many years, been their principal support, they considered themselves as destitute and forlorn, and were overwhelmed with the most gloomy apprehensions of their future sate."

B O O K XVIII.

Never was any person better sitted than the prince of Orange for the difficult situation in which he was placed, or better qualified for the arduous task of delivering an injured people from the yoke of their oppressor. Even his bitterest enemies allow him to have been possessed of vigilance, application, penetration, and sagacity, joined with a peculiar dexterity in governing the inclinations of men, and in conciliating and preserving their affections. To these accomplishments both the history of his life, and the testimony of the best informed historians, authorise us to add the virtues of fortitude and magnanimity, of justice and equi-

Character of the prince,

W Van Meteren, p. 363. Bentivoglio, lib. xii. Thuanus in hoc anno.

NOOK XVIII.

ty, of patience, equanimity, and moderation, which were never perhaps found united in one person in so eminent a degree. Amidst all the variety of fortune which he experienced, he was never either elated or depressed; but whether the events in which he was interested were prosperous or adverse, he preserved on all occasions the same composure and sevenity of soul.

been their principal form

By a respectable popish historian, he is accorded of avarice and rapacity, yet that author has not been able to produce a single fact to justify his charge. It appears not from any historian, that he was ever guilty of employing his power for the purpose of advancing his private interest to the prejudice either of individuals or the public. He always declined taking any concern in administering the sinances. He did not even exact payment of the revenue which the States had appointed him; and at his death he lest his private affairs so much encumbered, that the States found it necessary to make provision for the support of his widow and children.

THE same historian has loaded him with the imputation of fraud and hypocrify, of which

<sup>\*</sup> Thuani Historia. " Bentivoglio. " Wickfort, lib. ii.

however no proof was ever given but general invective, nor a fingle inftance of deceit brob duced by his most inveterate enemies. Before his rupture with Philip, he testified on all aceafions his disapprobation of the measures that were purfued; and after it, he acted uniforms ly the part of an open foe. He had no religion, fay fome catholic writers, but what his interest and ambition dictated. Yet he was decene and irreproachable in his conduct, as well as punctual in discharging the functions of that religion which he professed; nor do these and thors pretend to offer any other evidence to justify their furmife, but that he gave up the catholic religion, in which he had been educated at the court of the emperor, and returned to that with which his mind had been tinctured in his earliest infancy. His religion was not indeed of the same spirit either with that of those whom he forfook, or of many of those whose cause he adopted. It suffered him not to regard either speculative opinions or external rites, as fufficient ground for haraffing and butchering those from whom he differed in opinion. But in an age of cruel gloomy superstition, with which almost all the companions of his youth were deeply infected, his religion, conformably to the example and precepts of its author, was mild, moderate, and humane. Nor was it to one fect of Christians only that his

BOOK his moderation and humanity extended. As he did what he could, while he adhered to the catholic faith, to put a stop to the perfecution of the protestants; so after he had embraced the reformed religion, he exerted his most strenuous endeavours to protect the catholics from violence, and to procure liberty for them to exercise their religion as far as was consistent with the public peace. To infer from this conduct that he had no religion of his own, is going a great deal farther than to affert the lawfulness of persecution; it is equivalent to maintaining, that no christian can be sincere who can live at peace with those who differ from him in his religious persuasion.

> It is not to the purpose which the popish historians intended to serve by their portraits of William's character, to fay of him that he was ambitious: in itself, ambition merits neither praise nor blame, but is culpable or laudable according to the end at which it aspires, and the means which it employs. But if we judge concerning the character of the prince of Orange according to this criterion, it must be impossible for persons so opposite in their principles, as the catholic and protestant historians, to agree.

Is with the former, we place the rights of all fovereigns on the fame foundation, without diftindiftinguishing between an absolute prince and BOOK the fovereign of a free people, and believe that every prince is, by an indefeafible and divine right, intitled to exercise a despotic power over the religion and liberty of his subjects; if we believe, that, with the permission of the pope, a king may violate his most solemn oaths, and that the obligations of his subjects to obedience remain in force, even after every condition upon which they entered into them has been violated: if, with fuch principles as these, we judge of the character of the prince of Orange, it will be difficult not to confider him as guilty both of perjury and rebellion; and in this case, the most favourable verdict that can be passed upon his conduct, is to fay, that it proceeded from a criminal ambition. Columnia .

Bur if, on the other hand, we regard the pontiff's pretentions to the power of fetting men at liberty from their oaths as abfurd and impious; if we regard the rights of subjects as no less facred than those of kings; if we distinguish between a prince invested with unlimited authority, and one whose power is circumscribed by the fundamental laws of the State: between a prince whose right to his dominions is indefeafible, and one who obtained his fovereignty only upon certain terms, which he fwore to fulfil, while his fubjects engaged to vield

NOOK XVIII.

yield their obedience on condition of his fulfilling them; in this case, our judgment of William's character will be extremely different from what it was on the former supposition. We shall not be satisfied with barely afferting his innocence of those crimes of which his enemies have accused him, but shall confer upon him the glorious appellations which his countrymen bestowed, of the father of his country, and the guardian of its liberty and laws, who generously sacrificed his interest, ease, and safety to the public good, and who, first by counfel and persuasion, and afterwards by force of arms, did more to rescue his fellow-citizens from oppression, than was ever done in such unfavourable circumstances by any patriot in the world before \*.

\* William lest issue, sour sons and eight daughters. By his first wife, Anne of Egmont, Countess of Buren, he had Philip William, who was detained for thirty years a prisoner in Spain; and Mary de Nassau, who was married to count Hohenloe.

By his second wife, Anne, daughter of Maurice, elector of Saxony, he had prince Maurice, so much celebrated in the history of the Netherlands, and a daughter, named Emilia, who married Emanuel, son of Don Antonio, prior of Crato.

By his third wife, Charlotte de Bourbon, daughter of the duke de Montpensier, he had six daughters, viz.

1ft, Louisa Juliana, who was married to Frederick IV.

2d, Elizabeth,

2d, Elizabeth, whom he gave in marriage to Henry de la BOOK Tour, duke of Bouillon; and who, besides other children, bore her husband the celebrated Viscount de Turenne.

XVIII. 1584.

3d, Catharine, who married Lewis, Count de Hanau.

4th, Charlotte Brabantina, married to Claude, Duke de la Trimouille, to whom she bore the celebrated countess of Derby, who diftinguished herself during the civil wars in England; and from whom are descended the present noble families of Derby and of Athol.

5th, Charlotte Flandrina de Nassau, who embraced the Catholic religion, and diedlabbefs of St. Croix in Poitiers.

6th, Emilia de Nassau, who was married to the duke of Lansberg.

By his fourth and last wife, Louisa de Coligni, daughter of the great admiral de Chatillon, William had one son, Henry-Frederic, who succeeded his brother Maurice in the principality of Orange, and in his authority in the United Provinces.

Besides this numerous offspring, William lest a natural fon, Justin de Nassau, who was highly respected for his bravery and conduct, was intrusted with several important commands, and is often mentioned in the fequel.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

C. A. Edwarfers and T. I.

# PHILIPIL KING OF SPAIN.

Sours, duke par Bouillous and what, besides or ger children, XVIII.

Sours, duke par Bouillous and what, besides or ger children, XVIII.

Love him workened the selectioned Viscount of Turning.

36. Carbarine, who recreed Levis, Countrie Manne, to ach, Countries Manne, to ach, Countries and Carbar, Countries of Transaction to content of Transaction, who allow albert, bertell, during the Countries Bagtand, and hotel whom are defended the pretent noble than the of Derby and of Arbert.

e gran Obsidate Riengelan de Mallett, who embrecod the

lo ollub sit to beitrain et a oda weige V of a Sant 194

Fe his direct, and he wile, Louis de Collegi. Cagricos of elegan characters at the grant and the coe for a fleger endered. The case of the fleger endered because in the principle of the case of the

MVSEVM

MVSEVM BRITANNICVM

MATOR ANGORS 3111